

Goyette, et al. vs. City of Minneapolis, et al.

July 28, 2021

1		1		3	
UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT DISTRICT OF MINNESOTA		I N D E X		PAGE	
3	Jared Goyette, Craig Lassig,	2	<u>PLAINTIFFS' WITNESSES:</u>		
4	Katie Nelson, Tannen Maury,	3	EDWARD OU (Via Zoom)		
5	Stephen Maturen, Michael Shum,	4	Direct Examination By Ms. Foster	10	
6	and The Communications	4	Cross Examination By Ms. Landrum	69	
7	Workers of America, on behalf	5	Redirect Examination By Ms. Foster	93	
8	of themselves and other	5	CHRISTOPHER TUITE		
9	similarly-situated individuals,	6	Direct Examination By Ms. McGarraugh	94	
10	Plaintiffs,	6	Cross Examination By Mr. Hsu	128	
11	vs.	7	Redirect Examination By Ms. McGarraugh	141	
12	City of Minneapolis; Medaria	8	<u>DEFENDANTS' WITNESSES:</u>		
13	Arradondo, Minneapolis Chief of	9	JOHN HARRINGTON		
14	Police, in his individual and	10	Direct Examination By Mr. Hsu	147	
15	official capacity; Robert	10	Cross Examination By Mr. Riach	176	
16	Kroll, Minneapolis Police	11	JOSEPH DWYER		
17	Lieutenant, in his individual	12	Direct Examination By Ms. Landrum	200	
18	and official capacity; John	12	Cross Examination By Mr. Riach	259	
19	Harrington, Minnesota	13	Redirect Examination By Ms. Landrum	299	
20	Department of Public Safety	13	Recross Examination By Mr. Riach	304	
21	Commissioner, in his individual	14	Examination By the Court	305	
22	and official capacity; Matthew	15			
23	Langer, Minnesota State Patrol	16	<u>PLAINTIFFS' EXHIBITS</u>		REC'D
24	Colonel, in his individual and	17	1		119
25	official capacity; and John	18	3		100
Proceedings reported by court reporter; transcript	Does, 1-4, in their individual	18	4-A		115
produced by computer.	and official capacities,	19	4-B		117
	Defendants.	19	5		122
	-----	20	6		122
BEFORE THE HONORABLE WILHELMINA M. WRIGHT		20	8		56
UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT JUDGE		20	9		44
(MOTIONS HEARING)		21	10		34
		21	12		37
		22	14		25
		22	27		310
		23	37		290
		23	68		195
		24	71		185
		25			
1	<u>APPEARANCES</u>	2		4	
2	For the Plaintiffs:	Fredrikson & Byron, PA	1	I N D E X (Cont.)	
3		DULCE J. FOSTER, ESQ.	2		
4		PARI McGARRAUGH, ESQ.	2		
5		KAREN G. SCHANFIELD, ESQ.	2		
6		Suite 4000	3	<u>DEFENDANTS' EXHIBITS</u>	REC'D
7		200 South Sixth Street	3	1	202
8		Minneapolis, Minnesota 55402	3	2	206
9		ACLU of Minnesota	4	7	268
10		TERESA J. NELSON, ESQ.	4	10	310
11		ISABELLA S. NASCIMENTO, ESQ.	5	11	209
12		P.O. Box 14720	5	12	203
13		Minneapolis, Minnesota 55414	6	15	155
14		The Law Office of Kevin C. Riach	6	19	205
15		KEVIN C. RIACH, ESQ.	7	21	248
16		P.O. Box 270815	7	22	249
17		Vadnais Heights, Minnesota 55127	8	41	226
18	For Defendants City of	Minneapolis City Attorney's	8	42	215
19	Minneapolis and Chief	Office	9	43	242
20	Medaria Arradondo:	HEATHER PASSE ROBERTSON, ESQ.	10		
21		KRISTIN R. SARFF, ESQ.	11		
22		SHARDA R. ENSLIN, ESQ.	12		
23		Room 210	12		
24		350 South Fifth Street	13		
25		Minneapolis, Minnesota 55415	13		
16	For Defendant	Kelly & Lemmons, P.A.	14		
17	Lieutenant Robert	JOSEPH A. KELLY, ESQ.	14		
18	Kroll:	Suite 200	15		
19		2350 Wycliff Street	16		
20		St. Paul, Minnesota 55114	17		
21	For Defendants	Minnesota Attorney General's	18		
22	Commissioner John	Office	19		
23	Harrington and Colonel	ALEXANDER HSU, ESQ.	20		
24	Matthew Langer:	KATHRYN IVERSON LANDRUM, ESQ.	21		
25	Court Reporter:	JOSEPH D. WEINER, ESQ.	22		
		Suite 1100	23		
		445 Minnesota Street	23		
		St. Paul, Minnesota 55101	24		
		LORI A. SIMPSON, RMR-CRR	24		
		Suite 146	25		
		316 North Robert Street			
		St. Paul, Minnesota 55101			

Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR
651-848-1225

<p>1 P R O C E E D I N G S 2 IN OPEN COURT 3 4 LAW CLERK: The United States District Court for 5 the District of Minnesota is now in session. The case 6 number is 20-CV-1302, Jared Goyette, et al. vs. City of 7 Minneapolis, et al. 8 Counsel, please identify yourselves for the 9 purposes of the record. 10 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, Dulce Foster on behalf of 11 the plaintiffs. I'm here today with Kevin Riach, Pari 12 McGarraugh, and Karen Schanfield. 13 THE COURT: Thank you. Good morning, Ms. Foster. 14 MS. LANDRUM: Good morning, Your Honor. Kathryn 15 Iverson Landrum here on behalf of the Minnesota State Patrol 16 and the Minnesota Department of Public Safety. With me is 17 Joseph Weiner, Assistant Attorney General; Alexander Hsu, 18 Assistant Attorney General; and Shirley Kosek, a paralegal 19 with our office. 20 THE COURT: Okay. Good morning, everyone. 21 And as an initial matter, we are here for the 22 preliminary injunction hearing today and I would like to 23 remind everyone to please keep your face masks on while 24 you're in the courtroom. Counsel or other participants, you 25 may remove your face mask temporarily while you are addressing the Court provided that you are appropriately</p>	<p>5 1 being sequestered. We would like for him to hear the 2 testimony of the two witnesses so that he may respond to it. 3 And there is no basis to sequester otherwise. 4 THE COURT: You may respond or reply. 5 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, when the witnesses are 6 testifying, they can certainly be asked questions that are 7 relevant to testimony that has come before, but we think 8 it's important to have testimony that hasn't been impacted 9 by the statements that have been given by other witnesses in 10 this case. 11 THE COURT: I'm going to grant the motion. 12 Nonparty witnesses shall be excluded. As I understand it, 13 Commissioner Harrington is a party and so he may remain, but 14 the one other gentleman, I believe it is a gentleman that 15 you addressed, will need to be removed or sequestered until 16 his testimony or her testimony. 17 MS. LANDRUM: Understood. Thank you, Your Honor. 18 THE COURT: Okay. Is there anything else that we 19 need to address? 20 MR. WEINER: Your Honor, yes, just one 21 additional -- 22 COURT REPORTER: If you could stay near the 23 microphone, that would be -- 24 MR. WEINER: Is this any better? 25 THE COURT: It's fine, but also if you would like</p>
<p>6 1 distanced from each other and all others around you. 2 I believe there are people who are listening by 3 telephone. If you are not listening -- I'm sorry. If you 4 are not speaking, please mute your device, and you can do 5 that either by pressing star 6 or by using the mute on your 6 own device. 7 I will remind everyone that pursuant to General 8 Order No. 15 that was issued by Chief Judge Tunheim on 9 January 15, 2021, it is strictly prohibited for anyone to 10 record or broadcast any hearing in whole or in part in any 11 fashion, and that applies to this hearing as well. 12 Are there any preliminary matters that need to be 13 addressed at this time before we move to witness testimony? 14 MR. RIACH: One quick housekeeping matter for the 15 plaintiffs, Your Honor. We would ask that nonparty 16 witnesses be sequestered during the hearing. I believe that 17 would impact two witnesses. Once a witness is done 18 testifying, then I think we have no objection to their 19 presence in the courtroom. 20 THE COURT: Okay. Does anybody wish to be heard 21 on that matter? 22 MS. LANDRUM: Yes, Your Honor. Thank you. We 23 have two witnesses that we will be calling today. One is a 24 party, Commissioner Harrington. He is here with us today. 25 We would object to our second witness, Major Joseph Dwyer,</p>	<p>8 1 to remain seated, you may do so. 2 MR. WEINER: Given the microphone situation, maybe 3 I will do that. 4 THE COURT: Okay. 5 MR. WEINER: Your Honor, we would just like some 6 clarity as to the text order that was entered this morning 7 regarding the confidential documents that are going -- and 8 the closing of the courtroom. We just want to make sure 9 that this applies only to parties and not to other 10 individuals who may be testifying today but are not parties, 11 and that those individuals will be excluded in the event 12 that there's any confidential documents or exhibits that are 13 put before the Court. 14 THE COURT: You're asking whether nonparties need 15 to be excluded when confidential information is being 16 addressed; is that correct? 17 MR. WEINER: Yes, Your Honor, and specifically 18 talking about the witnesses that the plaintiffs have 19 identified today, neither of whom are parties to this 20 matter, and just making sure that -- 21 THE COURT: You said who are or who are not? 22 MR. WEINER: Are testifying today, yes, Your 23 Honor. 24 THE COURT: Are they parties to the matter? 25 MR. WEINER: They are not parties to this matter</p>

9

11

1 and so --

2 THE COURT: So if they are not parties, they need
3 to be not present in the courtroom during the confidential
4 disclosure. Understood?

5 MR. WEINER: Yes, Your Honor. That was our
6 understanding. We just wanted to make sure that that was
7 correct. Thank you, Your Honor.

8 THE COURT: Is there anything further that needs
9 to be addressed?

10 MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor.

11 MS. FOSTER: No, Your Honor.

12 THE COURT: Okay. Very well. Are we ready to
13 proceed?

14 MS. FOSTER: Yes, Your Honor. The plaintiffs call
15 Ed Ou.

16 Are you off mute?

17 THE WITNESS: Hi. Hello.

18 MS. FOSTER: Good morning, Mr. Ou. Could you
19 please state your name and --

20 COURT REPORTER: Wait. We need to swear him in.

21 MS. FOSTER: Oh, right.

22 (Witness sworn)

23 THE COURT: And please state your name, your full
24 name, and spell your last name, please.

25 THE WITNESS: My name is Edward Ou,

10

12

1 E-d [audio distortion] r-d, and then Ou is spelled O-u.

2 THE COURT: Okay. And we are having some
3 difficulty hearing you and so that means that you probably
4 need to adjust where your microphone is located. As you
5 move in, we can hear a little bit better, but it's not
6 uniformly good. Would you --

7 THE WITNESS: What about right now, if I speak
8 like this?

9 THE COURT: If you speak like that, we can hear
10 you, but --

11 THE WITNESS: Okay.

12 THE COURT: Okay.

13 THE WITNESS: Will do. I will try to speak
14 louder. And if you can't hear me, just please let me know
15 and I can repeat.

16 THE COURT: I will. Thank you.

17 Counsel, you may proceed.

18 MS. FOSTER: Thank you, Your Honor.

19 (Edward Ou)

20 DIRECT EXAMINATION

21 BY MS. FOSTER:

22 Q. Mr. Ou, we have you participating by Zoom today. Where
23 are you currently dialing in from?

24 A. I'm in Copenhagen, Denmark.

25 Q. Okay. Where do you live, Mr. Ou?

1 A. I live in New York, in the U.S.

2 Q. And where did you grow up?

3 A. I grew up in Canada.

4 Q. How long have you lived in the United States?

5 A. This time around, around four years. Since 2017.

6 Q. What do you do for a living, Mr. Ou?

7 A. I am a journalist, photojournalist, and documentary
8 filmmaker.

9 Q. How long have you worked as a photojournalist?

10 A. I've been working since around 2006, so 15 years.

11 Q. And can you please tell us what media outlets you've
12 worked for in your career.

13 A. I've worked for companies like the Associated Press,
14 The New York Times, NBC News, and a few others.

15 Q. Have you received any awards for your work?

16 A. Yeah, I have. Actually, yesterday I was nominated for
17 an Emmy Award for coverage of last year. I've received
18 Peabody Awards, other internationally-recognized awards,
19 like World Press Photo, et cetera. So yes.

20 Q. So I'm going to ask you to speak a little bit slower, if
21 you could, because the court reporter is here trying to take
22 down everything that you say and I'm sure she would
23 appreciate being able to take that down without you speaking
24 quickly. Thank you.

25 What is your current employment status, Mr. Ou?

1 A. I'm a freelance journalist right now.

2 Q. Okay. And what photo equipment do you normally carry
3 with you when you cover an event?

4 A. I have a combination of video cameras and then stills
5 cameras. So usually I have two cameras with me with a
6 microphone and one for stills and depending on, you know,
7 what the event is and what I'm covering, additional cameras
8 you know, stuff like that, tripod.

9 Q. Do you carry a backpack or anything else?

10 A. Yeah, I have a backpack. And then depending on the
11 situation, you know, like safety equipment or first aid kits
12 or stuff and then -- it just really depends.

13 Q. Would you be recognizable to the public as a journalist
14 when you're out covering an event?

15 MS. LANDRUM: Objection --

16 THE WITNESS: Yes.

17 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, calls for speculation.

18 THE COURT: Overruled.

19 BY MS. FOSTER:

20 Q. Do you carry credentials with you?

21 A. Yes.

22 Q. And where and how do you typically carry those?

23 A. Usually I have a lanyard and a badge and then -- that
24 says, like, who I am working with or, you know, that I am a
25 journalist.

<p style="text-align: center;">13</p> <p>1 THE COURT: Okay. And I am going to ask you again 2 to please make sure that we can hear you, so please move 3 your microphone closer to you.</p> <p>4 THE WITNESS: Sure.</p> <p>5 THE COURT: And, Ms. Foster, I'm wondering if it 6 might not be better for you to use the podium. Do you mind 7 using the podium?</p> <p>8 MS. FOSTER: No, Your Honor.</p> <p>9 THE COURT: Okay.</p> <p>10 THE WITNESS: I'm going to -- can you hear me now?</p> <p>11 MS. FOSTER: And may I remove my mask?</p> <p>12 THE COURT: You may remove your mask. And also 13 would you turn off -- okay. The video has been turned off 14 for you.</p> <p>15 I think this is the better way for us to move 16 forward, Counsel, just as we are testing what our 17 capabilities are in terms of being able to hear and 18 understand everyone with masks or without. So let's proceed 19 in this manner.</p> <p>20 If any attorney who is questioning a witness feels 21 uncomfortable at the podium because of COVID protections 22 that are needed, please let me know. You will be permitted 23 to question at your seats if that's what you prefer to do.</p> <p>24 And I believe we have covers for the microphone 25 that we can take off every -- between -- after every</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">15</p> <p>1 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>2 Q. Have you traveled outside of North America to cover news 3 events?</p> <p>4 A. Yeah.</p> <p>5 Q. Where have you traveled in your career?</p> <p>6 A. For most of my career I worked in the Middle East. I 7 was there covering mostly, you know, the Arab world. And 8 then I was based in East Africa for quite some time covering 9 mostly Somalia, Uganda, Sudan. So I've worked mostly 10 internationally, actually, as opposed to in the U.S.</p> <p>11 Q. What kind of --</p> <p>12 THE COURT: I didn't hear the last thing you said.</p> <p>13 THE WITNESS: I have worked mostly internationally 14 for more of my career than I have spent in the United 15 States.</p> <p>16 THE COURT: Thank you.</p> <p>17 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>18 Q. What kinds of events have you covered in those 19 locations? Can you describe them.</p> <p>20 A. In the Middle East, the majority of my work there has 21 been covering protests, conflict-related events. For 22 example, in Iraq or during the Arab Spring, I was in Egypt, 23 in Tahrir Square. I was in Libya, for example, when the 24 civil war broke out in 2011. So a lot of the -- because of 25 the nature of, you know, the Middle East and the political</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">14</p> <p>1 questioner if needed, so that we can maintain the sanitary 2 needs in order to stay safe in this setting.</p> <p>3 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>4 Q. So I am going to repeat the question. Where and how do 5 you carry your credentials?</p> <p>6 A. I usually have a lanyard and then a badge that says, 7 "Press" on it.</p> <p>8 Q. If there were a state-sponsored credentialing 9 requirement, would that make it difficult for you to cover 10 events?</p> <p>11 A. Yeah. Because I work nationally and internationally and 12 because we cover breaking news, we're often going to places 13 at the last minute to [audio distortion].</p> <p>14 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. I didn't hear --</p> <p>15 THE COURT: At the last minute to do what?</p> <p>16 MS. FOSTER: Speak again.</p> <p>17 THE WITNESS: We often have to travel at the last 18 minute because I work internationally and nationally. 19 Because as journalists we travel a lot and so in a 20 breaking-news situation, it's not exactly practical to have 21 any one credential for anything. To give an example, I live 22 in New York and I can't actually get a credential even in 23 New York because of some the requirements that are put on 24 us, you know, as journalists in terms of, like, 25 breaking-news contexts, et cetera. So it's difficult.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">16</p> <p>1 situation, it's a lot of, you know, conflict related and 2 civil unrest and stories within that.</p> <p>3 Q. Do you ever feel that there are risks to your own -- or 4 have you ever historically felt that there were risks to 5 your own safety when covering those events?</p> <p>6 A. Yeah. In a lot of countries in the Middle East or 7 places like Ukraine, there isn't exactly that much freedom 8 of the press and so a lot of times I have been targeted for 9 my work, you know, arrested. Colleagues of mine have been 10 kidnapped. So, yes, it is difficult to work in a lot of 11 those places.</p> <p>12 Q. Do you do anything to minimize threats to your safety 13 when you are covering a protest event?</p> <p>14 A. Yes. A lot of different -- a lot of protests are just 15 very different, so there's not one thing, but it's important 16 for us to have, you know, body armor, for example, should we 17 need it, to have a gas mask, to have goggles, to have a 18 helmet, to have a thing that says, "Press." It really 19 depends on the situation, but the key thing for us is to 20 always be prepared for every outcome.</p> <p>21 Q. Have you developed any practices with respect to where 22 you stand when you're covering a protest event?</p> <p>23 A. Yeah, all the time. I think when you cover a protest, 24 it's important to be always aware of where your exits are 25 and knowing where the police are, where protesters are. And</p>

17

1 you kind of have this, like, running commentary in your head
 2 that if something were to happen, where would you run to,
 3 how would you get out of there. A lot of times, you know,
 4 you're just thinking, okay, exit, where's the exit. So
 5 that's really important. And then also being able to kind
 6 of muscle memory how to -- where you went into the place, so
 7 that you can get out should you be tear-gassed, should you
 8 be unable to see. So, yeah, you kind of have to just
 9 develop a skill to know how to get out of trouble if you get
 10 into it.

11 **Q.** Do you make it a practice to avoid standing between the
 12 protesters and police?

13 **A.** Yes. That area is usually the most fraught place. So
 14 the best places are places off to the side, where you can
 15 kind of, like, see what's going on and not get in the middle
 16 of things, that have a good exit and cover as well.

17 **Q.** How close to the protesters do you typically have to be
 18 to get good coverage?

19 **A.** It depends on what you're shooting. If you are shooting
 20 photos, you tend to need to be a little bit closer, but
 21 sometimes you kind of just think to yourself, like, when is
 22 a safe time to get close to protesters to get the shots that
 23 you need, when is a good time to back off. And it's the
 24 same thing with, you know, police or security forces. You
 25 kind of just use your intuition to know what the mood is and

18

1 what the situation is to see what's safe and what's not
 2 safe.

3 **Q.** Would it make it difficult for you to film what's
 4 happening if you were required to stand and remain in a
 5 particular spot?

6 **A.** Yeah, it would be because protests by their nature are
 7 very dynamic. Usually they have an element of people
 8 marching. There's people coming from different places. So
 9 you kind of need to move around a lot, both to have coverage
 10 and also for safety. Because if a designated place is not
 11 safe anymore, it could become unsafe within a millisecond
 12 and then you just have to adapt. So a lot of covering
 13 protests is just -- it's very fluid.

14 **Q.** How long did you live in the Middle East, Mr. Ou?

15 **A.** I lived there until about 2017 or so. So about ten
 16 years.

17 **Q.** And why did you leave the Middle East?

18 **A.** There isn't one particular reason, but it was just
 19 getting very dangerous to work there. After the Arab
 20 Spring, countries started becoming progressively more
 21 dangerous and hostile toward journalists, Cairo, for
 22 example, when a lot of journalists were arrested. I was
 23 living in Turkey and I got kicked out of that country. And
 24 a lot of my colleagues, you know, were being kidnapped in
 25 Syria. Colleagues of mine have been killed. I had multiple

19

1 incidences where, you know, I got into trouble. And so at
 2 around that time I kind of decided that it was just getting
 3 a little bit too dangerous to [audio distortion].

4 **THE COURT:** I didn't hear the last thing you said.
 5 It got a little bit dangerous, and then you said something
 6 else and that was not audible.

7 **THE WITNESS:** Around that time it got a little bit
 8 too dangerous to work there. And so a combination of those
 9 factors led to me leaving the Middle East.

10 **THE COURT:** Thank you.

11 BY MS. FOSTER:

12 **Q.** Did you continue to cover protest activity after you
 13 moved to New York City?

14 **A.** Yep, I did. When I moved there, Charlottesville
 15 happened, so there was a lot of protests related to that.
 16 There were protests related to, you know, the Trump
 17 administration. So, yeah, there's a lot of different
 18 protests I've covered once I moved to the U.S.

19 **Q.** How concerned were you about becoming a law enforcement
 20 target once you moved to the United States versus as
 21 compared to the Middle East?

22 **A.** I wasn't concerned when I got there because, you know,
 23 in the U.S. it felt like it wasn't the Middle East, where
 24 there is, you know, the First Amendment and there's the
 25 freedom of the press. And so I wasn't exactly concerned

20

1 because it was the one place I actually felt that I could,
 2 like, very proudly declare that I was a journalist and just
 3 do my job without fear of, you know, retribution, like I had
 4 experienced in a lot of places in the [audio distortion].

5 **THE COURT:** I didn't hear the last bit again.

6 **THE WITNESS:** Sorry. It was one of the places --
 7 the U.S. is one of the places where I felt that I could
 8 operate pretty freely and film, you know, the police, cover
 9 the police as long as I was, you know, not interfering with
 10 their work. So I didn't feel unsafe at all.

11 BY MS. FOSTER:

12 **Q.** Did you cover the May 2020 Minnesota protests following
 13 the death of George Floyd?

14 **A.** Yes.

15 **Q.** Who was your employer at the time?

16 **A.** I was a staff journalist with NBC News.

17 **Q.** And what day did you arrive in Minnesota?

18 **A.** The 30th of May 2020.

19 **Q.** And do you recall the approximate time when you started
 20 filming events after your arrival?

21 **A.** Yeah. I landed around 5:00 and we met -- we had a
 22 briefing with the team, the NBC News team there, and I
 23 started shooting at around 6:30, 7:00-ish.

24 **Q.** Were you aware, when you began filming, of a curfew in
 25 place?

21

1 **A.** Yes, I was aware of a curfew, but I --
 2 **Q.** What was your understanding with respect to whether it
 3 covered the media?

4 **A.** Yeah, as I understood it, it didn't cover -- like, we
 5 were exempt, we, as the media, were exempt from that curfew.

6 **Q.** Were you visibly identifiable as a member of the media
 7 while you were out there?

8 **A.** Yes. I was wearing --

9 MS. LANDRUM: Objection --

10 (Simultaneous indiscernible crosstalk)

11 THE COURT: Wait. You stop. We have an objection
 12 and so I need to hear the nature of the objection, please.

13 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, Your Honor, calls for
 14 speculation.

15 THE COURT: Overruled.

16 BY MS. FOSTER:

17 **Q.** Mr. Ou, you may answer.

18 **A.** Sorry. What was the question again?

19 **Q.** Sorry. The question was whether you were visibly
 20 identifiable as a member of the media while you were out
 21 there.

22 **A.** Yes. I had cameras and a press badge with me that was
 23 very -- which made me obviously a member of the press.

24 **Q.** Were you also wearing a lanyard with your press badge?

25 **A.** Yeah, I had a lanyard with the NBC News logo that says,

22

1 "NBC News" on it and then a badge that also says, "NBC" and
 2 "Press" on it.

3 **Q.** Okay. And where in Minneapolis did you go?

4 **A.** I went to the Fifth -- so the first place that we went
 5 was the Fifth Precinct because we had heard that there was a
 6 rally there. So that was the first place, the precinct. It
 7 was the first place I covered, started shooting, but then we
 8 had like a briefing or meeting, I think on Lake Street,
 9 before that.

10 **Q.** Okay. Can you describe the area when -- not the
 11 briefing, but when you started covering the rally, where
 12 were you standing?

13 **A.** So the rally took place between 31st Street and, like,
 14 this bus station that was, like, right next door and then
 15 Nicollet. So the protesters had set up like a temporary --
 16 not podium exactly, but there was, like, a mini stage-ish
 17 area where people were standing, and most people were
 18 sitting down. It was like a rally that was, like, right on
 19 31st and Nicollet and people were giving speeches and had
 20 been occupying kind of that space, you know, giving speeches
 21 and listening to -- they were chanting and stuff like that.

22 **Q.** Were there any other reporters present?

23 **A.** Yes, there were many, many reporters.

24 **Q.** And how did you know that they were reporters?

25 **A.** Well, so, first off, it's a really small world of

24

1 journalists, so I recognized a lot of colleagues who are
 2 also friends, so we caught up with them. And then a lot of
 3 people had, you know, cameras and were filming and they had
 4 tripods and kind of journalistic equipment.

5 **Q.** Did you see anyone there who was audibly claiming to be
 6 a reporter whom you know was not a reporter?

7 **A.** No.

8 **Q.** When you arrived, were any of the people participating
 9 in the rally engaging in violent or threatening behavior?

10 **A.** No, they weren't.

11 **Q.** Was anyone from law enforcement in the area?

12 **A.** Yeah. There were state troopers kind of off to the
 13 side, down the street from Nicollet, closer to 32nd Street,
 14 kind of, like, at [audio distortion].

15 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. I didn't hear the
 16 last part he said.

17 BY MS. FOSTER:

18 **Q.** Can you repeat that, please?

19 **A.** Yeah. There were, I think, Minnesota state troopers on
 20 the south side of Nicollet, like, towards, like, 32nd Street
 21 or so. They had been filing kind of in and out of the Fifth
 22 Precinct.

23 **Q.** Was anyone throwing projectiles at the state troopers?

24 **A.** No.

25 **Q.** Did you see any fires burning?

1 **A.** No, I didn't.

2 **Q.** Did you see anyone looting?

3 **A.** No.

4 **Q.** How would you describe the mood of the crowd at that
 5 point when you were watching them rally?

6 **A.** When I first got there, it was -- I guess the mood, I
 7 would say, would be there was -- people were giving
 8 speeches, talking about kind of, like, their engagement with
 9 race. So I would say it was actually kind of quite
 10 cathartic and the mood was quite high. It was a pretty calm
 11 mood because people were mostly giving speeches and most
 12 people, except for the people who were speaking up on this
 13 mini podium thing, they were mostly sitting down and kind
 14 of, like, cheering on the people who were giving speeches.

15 **Q.** Did the mood of the crowd change at some point?

16 **A.** Things turned a little bit tense. We all got a text
 17 message on our phone that [audio distortion].

18 **Q.** We lost sound, and I'm not sure why. But can you start
 19 over again?

20 **A.** Things turned a little tense when we all got this, like,
 21 push alert on our phones that said that there is a curfew
 22 coming up. And so everyone took time to look at their
 23 phones, and that was kind of like a signal that -- you know,
 24 the mood went from calm and I wouldn't use the word
 25 celebratory, but it went to, like, what's going to happen.

25

1 It got tense.
 2 **Q.** And what did the state troopers do at that point?
 3 **A.** So at that point they had started to form a line around
 4 32nd Street and Nicollet, so Nicollet and 32nd Street. Most
 5 of the protesters were kind of still on 31st kind of near
 6 the bus station where they were rallying. And so the
 7 cops -- sorry, the State Patrol were gathering and forming a
 8 line.
 9 **Q.** Mr. Ou, did you have an opportunity to film this portion
 10 of the events that we've been talking about?

11 **A.** Yes.

12 **Q.** And have you had an opportunity prior to this hearing to
 13 review the video that was previously marked as Plaintiffs'
 14 Exhibit 14?

15 **A.** Yes.

16 **Q.** Is Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14 a copy of the video that you
 17 took that night?

18 **A.** Yes.

19 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, I would like to offer
 20 Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14.

21 THE COURT: Any objection to the admission of
 22 Exhibit 14?

23 MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor.

24 THE COURT: Exhibit 14 is admitted in evidence.

25 MS. FOSTER: Now I would like to publish a portion

26

1 of that video, if you would, Leslie?

2 THE COURT: You may. Let's verify that our
 3 witness also can see that portion or the video as you are
 4 playing it.

5 MS. FOSTER: Can you see the video?

6 THE WITNESS: Yes, I can see the video.

7 THE COURT: Very well. Thank you.

8 (Video recording played)

9 BY MS. FOSTER:

10 **Q.** At this point, Mr. Ou, did you hear the announcement
 11 that was being made by the troopers?

12 **A.** Yes.

13 **Q.** Were they announcing a curfew?

14 **A.** Yeah. They were telling the crowd to disperse, as I
 15 understood it.

16 **Q.** And --

17 THE COURT: Ms. Foster, is there a way for you to
 18 identify where on the video you have stopped the video just
 19 so we have --

20 MS. FOSTER: I believe we stopped --

21 THE COURT: -- a clear record?

22 MS. FOSTER: -- at 59 seconds, 58 or 59 seconds.

23 THE COURT: Thank you.

24 MS. FOSTER: 58 seconds.

25 THE COURT: You may proceed.

27

1 MS. FOSTER: I will continue to do that if it is

2 helpful.

3 THE COURT: Would you please do that. It will
 4 make for a clear record.

5 MS. FOSTER: Absolutely.

6 BY MS. FOSTER:

7 **Q.** At this point was the -- oh, so we were talking about
 8 the announcement that we heard on the video of the curfew.
 9 Again, it was your understanding that the curfew did not
 10 apply to journalists; is that what you testified to earlier?

11 **A.** Yes, we didn't think it applied to us.

12 **Q.** At this point in time was the crowd getting more
 13 agitated?

14 **A.** There were a few protesters that you saw on the video
 15 that were saying things at the State Patrol. They were
 16 giving them the finger. You know, there were a few people
 17 who were saying not-so-nice things [audio distortion].

18 **Q.** Aside from --

19 THE COURT: I didn't hear the last thing you said,
 20 sir. Would you say -- "there were a few people that," and
 21 then you trailed off.

22 THE WITNESS: That were saying not-so-nice things
 23 to the State Patrol --

24 THE COURT: Thank you.

25 THE WITNESS: -- profanities.

28

1 BY MS. FOSTER:

2 **Q.** Aside from those profanities, were any of the protesters
 3 looting or behaving violently at that point?

4 **A.** No.

5 **Q.** What did the State Patrol do after announcing the
 6 curfew?

7 **A.** So it was pretty quick. We had -- all us journalists
 8 kind of went off to the side, to the right of where you saw,
 9 and pretty immediately they started to attack us and launch
 10 concussion grenades at us pretty quickly. And so that
 11 escalated and -- yeah, so we were attacked.

12 **Q.** So you said you moved off to the side. And who were you
 13 standing with when you moved off to the side?

14 **A.** I was standing with a group of journalists and my
 15 colleagues, and so we were -- we kind of, like -- at that
 16 moment, you know, like, because, you know, we felt it was
 17 kind of -- like, we just gravitated and stayed into a group
 18 so that we could be easily, like, discerned from the
 19 protesters. So there was like an alcove that also gave us,
 20 you know, cover and so we kind of just, like, went off to
 21 the side.

22 **Q.** At least initially did you feel safe in that alcove?

23 **A.** I did, actually, because when I was talking about, like,
 24 where our egress is and what our cover is, these alcoves
 25 actually provided us a really good cover so that we had like

<p style="text-align: right;">29</p> <p>1 a solid wall in front of us kind of, like, blocking us so 2 that should there be any projectiles, we had a place to 3 duck. 4 Q. Were there any protesters standing in the alcove with 5 you? 6 A. No. 7 Q. And you mentioned being attacked. Can you describe for 8 me what happened to you. 9 A. It happened really quickly. They were -- we were 10 shooting and then all of a sudden something started being 11 launched at us and a projectile of some sort exploded in 12 front of my face, and that disoriented us because I think it 13 was a concussion grenade. 14 And so as I was trying to get my bearings, the 15 State Patrol, the state troopers came up to us pretty 16 quickly and I was pepper-sprayed in the face. And then they 17 kept on throwing concussion grenades at our feet, so they 18 kept on exploding. And so as I was pepper-sprayed, I 19 couldn't see. 20 I figured that they would -- we were in these 21 alcoves, so that they would just pass us so that they 22 could -- you know, if they were trying to disperse the 23 crowd, they would just pass us. But then they kept on -- 24 they targeted us and they kept corralling us into the place 25 where the protesters were, and we were -- it was -- it</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">31</p> <p>1 (Video recording played) 2 BY MS. FOSTER: 3 Q. Mr. Ou, at the very end of that segment we saw a bright 4 flash and we heard some screaming. Is that the point at 5 which the projectile hit you? 6 A. Yes. 7 THE COURT: Counsel, is it possible to identify 8 where on the recording we are -- you stopped the display 9 just so that it's clear in the record what you are referring 10 to? 11 MS. FOSTER: Yes. A minute 34. 12 THE COURT: Perfect. Thank you. 13 BY MS. FOSTER: 14 Q. Could you tell who threw it? 15 A. It came from the state troopers. 16 Q. Do you know what that object was that hit you? 17 A. I'm not an expert on this, but I think it was a 18 concussion grenade that exploded that was launched. 19 Q. Did it hurt? 20 A. It happened pretty quickly, so it was disorienting. 21 Yeah, it -- pain, I guess, at that moment doesn't really 22 register to -- 23 Q. Okay. Did it cause you any injuries? 24 A. Yeah. It hit my forehead right here (indicating). In 25 fact, you can still see a scar from it.</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">30</p> <p>1 happened really quickly and it was quite confusing because I 2 thought that they were just trying to move past us, but over 3 time it was pretty clear that we were being targeted and, 4 yeah, they were actively -- they were trying to disperse us 5 and they were trying to get us into -- kind of, like, mix us 6 in with the protesters. 7 MS. FOSTER: So at this point in time I would like 8 to play another portion of the video, starting at -- where 9 we left off and going through a minute, approximately a 10 minute and 34 seconds. 11 THE COURT: Thank you, Counsel. You may. 12 (Pause) 13 MS. FOSTER: We are trying to get the technology 14 worked out. Sorry. 15 (Pause) 16 MS. FOSTER: I apologize, Your Honor. 17 THE COURT: That's quite all right. 18 (Pause) 19 MS. FOSTER: She's having trouble with sharing the 20 screen. She said she got booted out. 21 THE COURT: Let's pause. We can go off the record 22 for this. 23 (Discussion off the record) 24 MS. FOSTER: Thank you, Judge. 25 THE COURT: You're welcome. We'll move forward.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">32</p> <p>1 Q. At this time I would like to direct your attention to a 2 photograph that I showed you before the hearing. It was 3 previously marked as Plaintiffs' Exhibit 10. Did you 4 recognize that photo? 5 A. That's a question for me? 6 Q. Yes. 7 MS. ANDERSON: I just got kicked out of Zoom, so I 8 might need just a minute. 9 MS. FOSTER: All right. We are having more 10 technical issues with the wifi. It's booting us out 11 periodically. 12 BY MS. FOSTER: 13 Q. We can talk about Plaintiffs' Exhibit 10 while she's 14 getting back booted up. Did you recognize that photograph? 15 I think you said yes? 16 A. Yeah, [audio distortion]. 17 Q. What is that -- 18 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear that answer. 19 THE COURT: Let's stop right here. Let me just 20 ask you to stop right here. I'll ask -- we are off the 21 record now. 22 (Discussion off the record) 23 BY MS. FOSTER: 24 Q. Are you familiar with Plaintiffs' Exhibit 10? 25 A. Yeah. I am looking at it right now.</p>

	33		35
1 Q. Okay. You have -- I sent you a copy of it before the 2 hearing so you would have that in front of you. What is 3 that a --		1 A. This is me after I was attacked by the police. 2 Q. And what is -- why is your face red in this picture? 3 A. It's a combination of blood and pepper spray. 4 Q. And was this caused by the -- was the blood caused by 5 the projectile that hit you? 6 A. Yes, I think so, and amongst other things. 7 Q. Okay. And you mentioned being pepper-sprayed. Who 8 pepper-sprayed you?	
4 THE COURT: Let me just stop here. I want to make 5 sure, Ms. Landrum, that you have access to the exhibit that 6 is being referred to and that you are able to follow along 7 with the examination that's being made as to exhibits. So 8 are you able to do so?		9 A. The Minnesota State Patrol. 10 Q. What kind of uniform was the individual who 11 pepper-sprayed you wearing; do you recall? 12 A. A person wearing riot gear, like a -- one of those, 13 like, state trooper things and black armor thing and then a 14 big helmet.	
9 MS. LANDRUM: Yes, Your Honor. I have paper 10 copies of all the exhibits, except for videos, right in 11 front of me.		15 Q. Okay. And so you said a state trooper thing. Was there 16 a state trooper label on the uniform? 17 A. I think so, yeah.	
12 THE COURT: Okay. So for purposes of this 13 hearing, we will be a little disorderly and that is to say 14 that if at any time you are having difficulty seeing any 15 exhibit that's being addressed, Counsel, please let me know 16 that and we will make sure that we remedy that problem using 17 whatever ingenuity we can muster to do so. Okay?		18 Q. Okay. How far away was he standing from you when he 19 sprayed you? 20 A. They were like a foot away from me, like, right next -- 21 right in front of me.	
18 MS. FOSTER: Thank you, Your Honor.		22 Q. Were you standing next to any protesters at that time? 23 A. No.	
19 THE COURT: Thank you.		25 MS. FOSTER: Okay. At this point in time I would	
20 MS. FOSTER: Thank you.			
21 THE COURT: You may proceed.			
22 BY MS. FOSTER:	34		36
23 Q. Mr. Ou, could you please describe what Plaintiffs' 24 Exhibit 10 is.		1 like to play the next segment of the video, starting at a 2 minute 34. 3 (Pause) 4 MS. FOSTER: It appears we don't have audio. 5 (Video recording played)	
25 A. That's a photo of me after I was hit in the face and --		6 THE COURT: Please make a record where the video 7 has stopped if you are going to question about what we have 8 seen so far. 9 MS. FOSTER: I believe we stopped at 2 minutes and 10 13 seconds. 11 THE COURT: Thank you.	
		12 BY MS. FOSTER: 13 Q. Was it obvious that you were a journalist when this 14 happened? 15 A. Yes. 16 Q. Were you still carrying professional camera equipment? 17 A. Yeah, I had a camera and then my press credentials. 18 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, Your Honor. This 19 testimony calls for speculation, has a lack of foundation. 20 He can't testify as to what other people's perception of him 21 was.	
		22 THE COURT: Sustained. You may restate the 23 question in a manner in which you elicit the information you 24 need.	
		25 BY MS. FOSTER:	

37

1 **Q.** Mr. Ou, what were you carrying with you at this time?
 2 **A.** I was carrying a camera with a microphone and stuff, so
 3 it's what I use to shoot with. I had a backpack. I had a
 4 credential, like a press lanyard that said, "NBC News" with
 5 the pretty iconic logo of the peacock, and then a badge that
 6 said, "Press" on it.

7 **Q.** Are you familiar with Plaintiffs' Exhibit 12, which I
 8 sent to you before the hearing? Did you have an opportunity
 9 to review that?

10 **A.** Yeah. 12, yes.

11 **Q.** And do you recognize that photograph?

12 **A.** Yes. That's me.

13 **Q.** Who's the person in that photograph?

14 **A.** That's me.

15 **Q.** Was this taken during the Floyd protests on May 30,
 16 2020?

17 **A.** Yes.

18 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, at this time I would like
 19 to offer Plaintiffs' Exhibit 12.

20 MS. LANDRUM: No objection, Your Honor.

21 THE COURT: Exhibit 12 is received, Plaintiffs'
 22 Exhibit 12.

23 BY MS. FOSTER:

24 **Q.** As you can see in the picture, there's, it looks like, a
 25 lanyard that you are wearing on the outside of your clothes.

38

1 Was that an NBC -- the NBC press lanyard that you were just
 2 referring to with the peacock logo?

3 **A.** Yes.

4 **Q.** What were you wearing on your head?

5 **A.** These are headphones.

6 **Q.** Is that part of the professional gear that you normally
 7 carry?

8 **A.** Yes.

9 **Q.** And were you standing with other reporters at that time?

10 **A.** Yes, reporters, video journalists.

11 **Q.** When you were pepper-sprayed, were you or any of the
 12 journalists you were standing with, were you doing anything
 13 to provoke the troopers?

14 **A.** No. We were filming.

15 **Q.** Were you throwing anything at them?

16 **A.** No.

17 **Q.** Did the trooper who sprayed you warn you before he did
 18 it?

19 **A.** No.

20 **Q.** Did he appear to be intentionally targeting you? Was
 21 that your perception?

22 **A.** Yes.

23 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, Your Honor, again, lack
 24 of personal knowledge and speculation.

25 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, I'm asking about his

39

1 perception.
 2 THE COURT: Overruled.
 3 BY MS. FOSTER:
 4 **Q.** Was that your perception, that you were being targeted?
 5 **A.** Yes.
 6 **Q.** What were you sprayed with? Do you know what the
 7 substance was?
 8 **A.** It was pepper spray, I think, or Mace or --
 9 **Q.** What was the consistency of the spray?
 10 **A.** It was like a liquid that once it got on you, it started
 11 to -- it made me -- it really hurt and it kind of blinded
 12 me.
 13 **Q.** What does tear gas -- have you been tear-gassed before
 14 in your --
 15 **A.** Many --
 16 (Simultaneous indiscernible crosstalk)
 17 **Q.** -- covering protests?
 18 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear that answer.
 19 THE COURT: And please keep your voice up. We are
 20 having trouble hearing you. Okay?
 21 THE WITNESS: I have been tear-gassed
 22 [audio distortion].
 23 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear that either.
 24 BY MS. FOSTER:
 25 **Q.** You have been tear-gassed before?

1 **A.** Yes.
 2 **Q.** How did this differ from tear gas?
 3 **A.** Tear gas, once you are in the region, it starts to burn,
 4 but the moment you leave the region, the area that's
 5 being -- that there's the puff of smoke, you're kind of --
 6 it takes a second to recover, but then you're fine.
 7 With this pepper spray, it sticks on you so it --
 8 there's nowhere to go and it just stays on you. In fact, it
 9 stayed on me for weeks and weeks after this happened.
 10 **Q.** So what happened after that? Did you get hit with
 11 anything else?
 12 **A.** It's hard to say, but we -- I was blind at this point.
 13 So we were pushed and shoved a bunch of places as we
 14 were trying to leave. So I was hit multiple times with
 15 [audio distortion].
 16 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. I couldn't hear. I
 17 think what is happening is when he moves a lot, we lose the
 18 audio.
 19 MS. FOSTER: Yeah, so if you could avoid moving
 20 back and forth. Sorry.
 21 THE WITNESS: So, yeah, I was blind at this point,
 22 so I don't know exactly what hit me. But I was shoved
 23 around. At some point in time I also hit a wall. I don't
 24 know if I was being -- I was running into other people or if
 25 I was being hit from behind by other people or people were

<p style="text-align: right;">41</p> <p>1 bumping into me. I don't know because I was blind at that 2 moment.</p> <p>3 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>4 Q. Why were you blind?</p> <p>5 A. Because I was pepper-sprayed in the face, and there was 6 also blood streaming down. So I don't know what -- it was a 7 combination of [audio distortion].</p> <p>8 COURT REPORTER: A combination of? I didn't hear.</p> <p>9 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>10 Q. You didn't finish the sentence. It's a combination of 11 what?</p> <p>12 A. It was a combination of both pepper spray and then 13 blood, which I didn't know at that time what it was, but I 14 couldn't see.</p> <p>15 Q. Okay. Did you leave the alcove that you were standing 16 in after you got pepper-sprayed?</p> <p>17 A. Yes. We were pushed away from that alcove. I thought 18 that in that alcove the state troopers would pass us, but 19 they did not.</p> <p>20 Q. Where did you go?</p> <p>21 A. We were corralled down Nicollet Street towards 31st. 22 So, yeah, we kept on trying to stay in the alcove to get out 23 of the way of the state troopers, but then they specifically 24 kept on pushing us forward into where the rally was 25 happening. I was trying to just leave, but I couldn't see,</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">43</p> <p>1 another segment of the video, starting at where we left 2 off --</p> <p>3 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>4 MS. FOSTER: -- and going through 3 minutes and 5 46 seconds, approximately.</p> <p>6 (Video recording played)</p> <p>7 THE COURT: Let's stop here. You've made the 8 record clear you have been -- the video played from 2:13 to 9 what is the stopping point?</p> <p>10 MS. FOSTER: 3:46.</p> <p>11 THE COURT: 3:46. Thank you, Counsel.</p> <p>12 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>13 Q. Mr. Ou, towards the end of that video there were people 14 climbing over a wall, it appeared. Do you know who those 15 people were?</p> <p>16 A. Yes. So the first batch of people who were passing the 17 microphone, I think that was a TV crew. And then the second 18 person who was shoved over the wall is a colleague and 19 friend of mine. His name is Mike Shum.</p> <p>20 Q. You said he was shoved over the wall. Did you see who 21 was shoving him?</p> <p>22 A. It was the state troopers who did that.</p> <p>23 Q. Did you climb over the wall?</p> <p>24 A. I tried to at first, but I couldn't see and it was a 25 pretty high wall, so I -- like, I couldn't see, so it just</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">42</p> <p>1 so I got, like, corralled into kind of, like -- in the bus 2 station there was like a fenced-off area, which I think is 3 where the power generator or something was, and so we got 4 trapped inside like a fenced-off area.</p> <p>5 Q. When you say "we," who do you mean other than yourself?</p> <p>6 A. Myself and the journalists I was with.</p> <p>7 Q. So it was a whole group of journalists that went to this 8 area?</p> <p>9 A. Yes.</p> <p>10 Q. Did the protesters come with you or were you segregated 11 from the protesters?</p> <p>12 A. I didn't see protesters. I was mostly -- we were in a 13 pretty packed group of journalists. So, as I recall, it was 14 mostly journalists I was with.</p> <p>15 Q. Were you safe there?</p> <p>16 A. No, I wasn't because we were trapped. And then the 17 state troopers came and they kept on throwing concussion 18 grenades at us, telling us to leave, but there was nowhere 19 for us to go. So, no, I was not safe there. We would have 20 been safe if we weren't [audio distortion].</p> <p>21 THE COURT: I didn't hear you. You said we would 22 have been safe if what?</p> <p>23 THE WITNESS: If we weren't targeted by the state 24 troopers.</p> <p>25 MS. FOSTER: At this point I would like to play</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">44</p> <p>1 felt a little bit dangerous. So I was very disoriented at 2 that time. But I had thought about this, but I had a 3 backpack and all my camera gear and I couldn't see and I was 4 bleeding, so it felt really -- it just -- I tried to, but it 5 seemed a little difficult.</p> <p>6 Q. You said you were having trouble breathing. Why were 7 you having trouble breathing?</p> <p>8 A. Because I was pepper-sprayed in the face.</p> <p>9 Q. Okay. Are you familiar with Plaintiffs' Exhibit 9, 10 which I sent to you prior to this hearing?</p> <p>11 A. Let me just take a look. Yes.</p> <p>12 Q. Do you recognize that photograph?</p> <p>13 A. Yes.</p> <p>14 Q. What is that a photograph of?</p> <p>15 A. That was an N95 mask I was wearing at that moment.</p> <p>16 Q. And was this taken during the Floyd protests on 17 May 30th?</p> <p>18 A. It was taken after, when I got back to the hotel room 19 where I was staying.</p> <p>20 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, I would like to offer 21 Plaintiffs' Exhibit 9.</p> <p>22 MS. LANDRUM: No objections.</p> <p>23 THE COURT: Exhibit 9 is received in evidence.</p> <p>24 BY MS. FOSTER:</p> <p>25 Q. So what appears to be covering your mask in this photo?</p>

<p>1 A. I think it's a combination of blood and also pepper 2 spray or Mace. 3 Q. Did that make it difficult for you to breathe, the fact 4 that your mask was covered in substances? 5 A. Yeah. 6 Q. Did any of the troopers approach you while you were 7 trapped against the wall in that area? 8 A. Yeah. One person, I think, threw a concussion grenade 9 at us and grabbed me, I think, as I remember, and I was kind 10 of, like, handled. But, yeah, I -- but it was hard for me 11 to see, so I think that's what happened. 12 Q. Did they say anything? 13 A. They -- I remember they said, like, "What do you want me 14 to do with this person?" I thought that they were going to 15 arrest me. And at that point I just wanted anything to get 16 out of that situation. If they arrested me, so be it. I 17 just wanted to get out of the alcove because there was 18 nowhere else to go. 19 Q. Did they arrest you? 20 A. No. 21 MS. FOSTER: I would like to play the video, 22 another segment, starting at where we left off. 23 (Video recording played) 24 MS. FOSTER: I don't know if you heard that. 25 Should we -- can we replay that?</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">45</p> <p>1 on fire and then something hurt. 2 Q. Did you go anywhere? 3 A. I tried to get help. And I was really disoriented, so I 4 was just trying to get out of that situation and find some 5 help. 6 Q. Who did you ask for help from? 7 A. The law enforcement officers. There were state troopers 8 that were filing through and then, I think, Minneapolis 9 Police were kind of passing me. 10 Q. Did anyone help you? 11 A. No. 12 Q. Were you still recording while all of this was 13 happening? 14 A. As you saw in the video, around like a minute before, I 15 was trying to. So when I got into the alcove, I was kind 16 of, like, still trying to film a little bit, but then I 17 couldn't see. So I was, like, half trying to do my job, 18 thinking at that alcove that I was then finally safe, and 19 then the state troopers came and started throwing grenades 20 at us again and so then I went into survival mode again. So 21 I tried to report, but I couldn't. 22 MS. FOSTER: I would like to play another segment 23 of the video, starting at 3:51. 24 (Video recording played) 25 MS. FOSTER: So, for the record, we have stopped</p>
<p>1 THE COURT: And let's identify what portion of the 2 video that is. Is it 3:50? 3 MS. FOSTER: It's 3:51 -- so 3:46 to 3:51. 4 THE COURT: Thank you. 5 MS. FOSTER: Very brief segment. 6 (Video recording played) 7 BY MS. FOSTER: 8 Q. So is he talking about maybe handcuffing you? 9 A. Yeah. They said, "What do you want me to do with this?" 10 The "this" was me. 11 Q. Okay. 12 A. I'm the "this." 13 Q. Was it obvious that you were injured at that point? 14 A. Yes, I -- 15 Q. I'm sorry. Was it your perception that it was obvious 16 that you were injured at that point? 17 A. I was bleeding in my face, so, yeah, I was injured. 18 Q. Did the troopers offer to help you? 19 A. No. 20 Q. What did you do when they left? 21 A. I was asking for help. 22 Q. Were you still bleeding as you were asking for help? 23 A. Yeah. I also couldn't see and I was in considerable 24 pain, but it was -- I didn't know where -- this happened 25 very quickly. So mostly I couldn't see and then my face was</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">46</p> <p>1 at 5 minutes and 15 seconds in Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14. 2 BY MS. FOSTER: 3 Q. Who ultimately helped you at the end of that video, 4 Mr. Ou? 5 A. A colleague of mine and a friend. His name is Peter van 6 Agtmael. 7 Q. Where did he take you? 8 A. He took me to the corner of 32nd, so down Nicollet, and 9 he kind of gave me first -- to the -- I guess the -- not the 10 corner. So he started helping me there, and then we had to 11 run again because I think they started -- so he was trying 12 to give me first aid, and some other civilians or bystanders 13 showed up and someone gave me water and someone gave me a 14 T-shirt and gauze and stuff. And so we were there for a 15 second and then we had to move again because there was 16 cops or there was explosions or concussion grenades and 17 [audio distortion]. 18 Q. You faded out again. I'm sorry. Could you repeat the 19 end of that? You said you had to leave again because? 20 A. Because we were -- I guess we were targeted again by 21 concussion grenades. So everyone ran closer down 22 32nd Street and we got cover by the bus depot, like, just 23 half a block down. 24 Q. Eventually were you able to get medical treatment? 25 A. Yeah. I reconnected with the colleagues I was with, my</p>

49

1 reporting partner, and they patched me up or they put gauze
 2 on my face, but then I kept on bleeding and eventually I had
 3 to go to the hospital.

4 **Q.** How long were you at the hospital?

5 **A.** Around four hours or so.

6 **Q.** What did the doctors do to treat your injuries?

7 **A.** They stitched my -- they gave me four stitches, and then
 8 I got a tetanus shot and a bunch of tests. I forgot what.
 9 But they gave me tests and then they stitched me up.

10 **Q.** Was it painful?

11 **A.** It was pretty painful, yes.

12 **Q.** You said it took several hours. Did you get a
 13 diagnosis?

14 **A.** It was pretty clear what had happened. So it was trauma
 15 to my face.

16 **Q.** Okay.

17 **A.** But then the other thing, too, is I had pepper spray
 18 still kind of, like, dripping down all over my body, so that
 19 was -- it was a combination of many things.

20 **Q.** Were you able to continue your coverage of the events
 21 that night?

22 **A.** Not that night. Actually, our editors pulled out a lot
 23 of the teams working and we were all told to go back to our
 24 hotels.

25 **Q.** Why did they do that? What was the reason you were

50

1 given?

2 **A.** After -- I had not known this, but other people from NBC
 3 News were attacked that night by law enforcement and so they
 4 deemed it was too dangerous for us to stay out.

5 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, Your Honor, hearsay.

6 That testimony was based off of hearsay, about the other
 7 attacks.

8 THE COURT: Counsel?

9 MS. FOSTER: He's explaining what his
 10 understanding of the events was and the reason for the
 11 reporters being taken off the street.

12 MS. LANDRUM: With that understanding, Your Honor,
 13 it's based off hearsay alone versus his personal knowledge.

14 THE COURT: Sustained.

15 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.

16 BY MS. FOSTER:

17 **Q.** What happened the next day, Mr. Ou?

18 **A.** So the next day being -- so this happened at 8:00 on the
 19 30th, and the next day was -- if you are asking what
 20 happened, like, at midnight, I was in the hospital and I was
 21 there until around, I think, in the early morning and then
 22 we went to the hotel because we hadn't checked in yet.

23 And so I checked into the hotel with a bloody face
 24 and I -- it took another few hours to just clean my face,
 25 and so I started to file all my footage that night. So it

51

1 was a combination of working and then talking to, you know,
 2 my girlfriend, my partner, and then also cleaning my face.
 3 And then I talked to my editors when they woke up
 4 and told them -- we kind of had a debriefing of what
 5 happened. They asked me if I wanted to stay there, and I
 6 did. And so we made a plan with Dani, the reporter I was
 7 with, to go back out and keep working.

8 **Q.** And where did you go back out?

9 **A.** In the morning we went by 30th and Chicago to just see
 10 what was happening there. I found -- I had met some
 11 characters, some people the night before, who I called and
 12 we filmed them at home.

13 And then there was a protest in the evening near a
 14 highway, like on a highway, which I don't remember the name
 15 of the highway because I'm not from Minneapolis, but. So
 16 there was a protest there and that's what -- that was our
 17 day. We were going to protests.

18 **Q.** And where were you when you were covering the
 19 protests -- that protest that was on the highway, where were
 20 you standing?

21 **A.** We originally went down to kind of, like, this exit
 22 ramp, but there was a lot of state troopers and I was pretty
 23 shaken, so we kind of pulled back. And then I was filming
 24 from like an overpass looking down at things. But we kind
 25 of kept our distance.

52

1 **Q.** Why did you keep your distance?

2 **A.** I was scared. I didn't know how to act around the
 3 police or just law enforcement in general because what
 4 happened the night before really caught, I think, a lot of
 5 us -- well, it caught me off guard and I just didn't know
 6 how they would react to us because they targeted us pretty
 7 deliberately the night before and I just wasn't sure, like,
 8 what -- whether they would attack us again.

9 **Q.** So did having been attacked and targeted the night
 10 before affect where you decided to cover the events the
 11 following night?

12 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor --

13 THE WITNESS: Yes.

14 MS. LANDRUM: -- the defendants object to this
 15 line of questioning with regard to the [inaudible].

16 COURT REPORTER: Excuse me. Is your microphone
 17 on? I am having trouble hearing you.

18 MS. LANDRUM: Oh. My apologies, Your Honor.

19 THE COURT: And if you would like, you may remain
 20 seated, because it might be the best way for us to hear you.
 21 And the Court knows you respect the Court. Thank you.

22 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor. We are
 23 objecting to this line of testimony, the questions and the
 24 answers, with regard to the phrase "intentional and
 25 deliberate targeting." There's a lack of personal knowledge

53

1 and speculation as to the state of mind of any
 2 individuals -- of anyone other than Mr. Ou. So we would
 3 object on those bases.

4 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, this line of questioning
 5 goes to Mr. Ou's state of mind and to his perception that he
 6 was being attacked and targeted. It's totally proper.

7 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, if I may, the phrase
 8 "deliberate and intentional," those are phrases that are
 9 going at the state of mind of other actors who are not
 10 Mr. Ou.

11 THE COURT: I will overrule the objection. My
 12 hearing of the witness was his rationale and his
 13 understanding and his reasons for his actions. So the Court
 14 is receiving that evidence in that manner.

15 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.

16 BY MS. FOSTER:

17 Q. So you were -- were you concerned about getting
 18 assaulted again?

19 A. Yes. I was scared.

20 Q. Has that had a lasting impact on your ability to do your
 21 job as a journalist?

22 A. Yeah, it has, even now.

23 Q. Did you return to Minneapolis in April 2021?

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. And why did you return to Minneapolis at that time?

54

1 A. I was assigned to cover the Chauvin verdict. It was --
 2 at that time we were expecting that there would be a verdict
 3 in the trial. So around that same time there was another
 4 incident in Brooklyn Center and so there were protests
 5 related to Daunte Wright. And so around that same time that
 6 I was going to cover the Chauvin verdict, that happened, so
 7 we went.

8 Q. Where did you go in Brooklyn Center?

9 A. I went to the police department, where protests were
 10 happening.

11 Q. And what kind of story did you cover there?

12 A. I did a combination of news, but I stayed back a bit.
 13 So I did a story where I covered -- I was inside an
 14 apartment building that overlooked where the protests were
 15 happening and so I was with a family watching them kind of,
 16 like, witness what was happening from their balcony because
 17 their house/balcony looked over, right over, the police
 18 station.

19 Q. Did that story get published?

20 A. It was published in The New York Times.

21 Q. Where were you physically located when you were covering
 22 that story?

23 A. At the beginning I was kind of covering a march down on
 24 the ground, but as things became a bit more tense, I went
 25 inside and stayed inside this apartment block --

55

1 Q. Why did you choose --

2 THE COURT: Let's let him finish --

3 MS. FOSTER: I'm sorry.

4 THE COURT: -- his response.

5 MS. FOSTER: I thought he was done.

6 THE COURT: You may finish your response.

7 THE WITNESS: Yes. So I was inside of an

8 apartment block filming from someone's house.

9 BY MS. FOSTER:

10 Q. Why did you choose that location?

11 A. It felt safer because, you know, it was -- it was
 12 difficult covering Minneapolis because, again, law
 13 enforcement was really unpredictable, and that was
 14 consistent. And I just really didn't want to get targeted,
 15 so I decided to be somewhere safer.

16 Q. Was there a curfew in place that night?

17 A. Yes.

18 Q. What was your understanding -- and what was your
 19 understanding of how the curfew applied to journalists?

20 A. As I understood it, the curfew did not apply to
 21 journalists.

22 Q. Did you witness any dispersal orders being issued by law
 23 enforcement that night?

24 A. Yes.

25 Q. Did you capture that on video?

56

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. Have you had an opportunity to review the video, prior
 3 to this hearing, that was marked as Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8?

4 A. Yes.

5 Q. And is Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8 a copy of the video that
 6 you took that night?

7 A. Yes.

8 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, I would like to offer
 9 Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8.

10 MS. LANDRUM: No objections, Your Honor, subject
 11 to there are some statements from a witness in the video
 12 that would be hearsay, but the video itself and what it's
 13 capturing we have no objection to.

14 THE COURT: Exhibit 8 is received.

15 (Video recording played)

16 BY MS. FOSTER:

17 Q. What was the announcement that we just heard saying --
 18 about the media?

19 A. They told the media to disperse.

20 Q. Is it common for law enforcement to issue multiple
 21 dispersal orders before they move forward with a mass arrest
 22 after giving an order like that?

23 MS. LANDRUM: Objection --

24 THE WITNESS: I think --

25 MS. LANDRUM: -- no foundation.

57

1 BY MS. FOSTER:
 2 **Q.** Mr. Ou, have you participated and covered a number of --
 3 THE COURT: Let me rule on the --
 4 MS. FOSTER: I apologize.
 5 THE COURT: -- objection. Sustained.
 6 BY MS. FOSTER:
 7 **Q.** Have you covered a number of protests in your career?
 8 **A.** Yes.
 9 **Q.** Have you witnessed dispersal orders in the past?
 10 **A.** Yes.
 11 **Q.** Have you seen -- in your experience, have you seen mass
 12 arrests taking place?
 13 **A.** Yes.
 14 **Q.** So do you have a common base of experience from which to
 15 determine -- a base of experience from which to determine,
 16 at least in your career, what has been common?
 17 **A.** Yes.
 18 MS. FOSTER: Your Honor, I think that establishes
 19 foundation for the question that was asked.
 20 THE COURT: You may ask the question.
 21 MS. FOSTER: Okay.
 22 BY MS. FOSTER:
 23 **Q.** Is it common for law enforcement to issue multiple
 24 dispersal orders before they move forward with mass arrests,
 25 based on your experience?

58

1 **A.** In general, yeah.
 2 **Q.** Can a significant period of time pass between the first
 3 dispersal order and any arrests that occur?
 4 **A.** Yes.
 5 **Q.** Is it common for members of the media to stay during
 6 this period of time so that they can cover the interactions
 7 between police and protesters?
 8 **A.** Yes.
 9 **Q.** Do you believe that's important?
 10 **A.** Yes.
 11 **Q.** Why?
 12 **A.** Because that's the foundational nature of our job as
 13 journalists, is to bear witness and hold any side to
 14 anything to account. And especially with law enforcement,
 15 to hold them to account and just see what happens so we can
 16 see with our own eyes, like, what -- how they act.
 17 **Q.** Did you see any members of the media attacking law
 18 enforcement officers that night in Brooklyn Center?
 19 **A.** [Inaudible.]
 20 **Q.** Could you repeat that?
 21 THE COURT: I didn't hear your response.
 22 BY MS. FOSTER:
 23 **Q.** We didn't hear your response.
 24 **A.** No, I did not see members of the media attacking law
 25 enforcement.

59

1 **Q.** Were any journalists throwing things or looting?
 2 **A.** No.
 3 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, Your Honor, lack of
 4 foundation, lack of personal knowledge, speculation inasmuch
 5 as Mr. Ou couldn't possibly know who on the ground was or
 6 was not media.
 7 THE COURT: Overruled. You may answer based on
 8 your personal knowledge.
 9 THE WITNESS: Sorry. Can you repeat the question?
 10 I got --
 11 BY MS. FOSTER:
 12 **Q.** Sure. Based on your personal knowledge or what you saw,
 13 were any journalists throwing things or looting?
 14 **A.** No, I did not see that happen.
 15 **Q.** To the extent that you were able to see what was going
 16 on, what were the journalists you saw doing at the protest?
 17 **A.** I saw journalists reporting, holding cameras, writing
 18 stuff down in notebooks, holding -- streaming, doing their
 19 job.
 20 **Q.** And how were you able to recognize who were the
 21 journalists?
 22 **A.** People had cameras. They had notepads. They were
 23 holding their phones in a way that made it clear that they
 24 were livestreaming. It's pretty simple to tell who is doing
 25 journalism.

60

1 **Q.** When you heard that dispersal message, did you leave the
 2 area?
 3 **A.** No, I didn't because I was already in private property.
 4 **Q.** Okay.
 5 **A.** It didn't [audio distortion].
 6 **Q.** We didn't hear that. Could you move closer to the mike?
 7 **A.** We were -- I was in private property and so -- and,
 8 also, it was my understanding that that dispersal order did
 9 not apply to journalists.
 10 **Q.** Did anyone threaten you while you were on the private
 11 property?
 12 **A.** Yeah. When I was filming from the vantage point that
 13 you saw inside -- not even on the balcony, but from inside,
 14 law enforcement pointed stuff at us, pointed something at me
 15 and said, "Go away, go away," like "Back off, back off."
 16 And so I backed off because I didn't want to put the person
 17 whose home I was in in jeopardy, because I didn't know how
 18 the law enforcement would react if I was there. So I kind
 19 of just made myself scarce.
 20 **Q.** Were you able to identify which law enforcement agency
 21 that individual worked for?
 22 **A.** No.
 23 **Q.** Were there multiple law enforcement agencies that you
 24 saw present that night?
 25 **A.** Yeah. There were state troopers there, but then also

61

1 Brooklyn Center was -- I'm not exactly used to what people
 2 were wearing, but, as I remember, there was also National
 3 Guard there and there were people wearing fluorescent
 4 yellow, fluorescent greenish jackets and dark -- it seemed
 5 like a combination of different law enforcement agencies.

6 **Q.** Did the presence of multiple agencies make it difficult
 7 for you to identify who pointed the thing at you and told
 8 you to back off?

9 **A.** Yes.

10 **Q.** How did you respond to that threat? What did you do?

11 **A.** I backed off because, you know, even though objectively
 12 I knew that I was on private property and was filming, like,
 13 I didn't need to go anywhere, as journalists we have to also
 14 act ethically and knowing that if there was -- if law
 15 enforcement punished the people I was filming, I wouldn't
 16 want that -- I wouldn't want to cause somebody to get in
 17 trouble because of what I was doing. And so it's always a
 18 balance of what you are legally allowed to do, but ethically
 19 how to not do harm to your subjects [audio distortion].

20 COURT REPORTER: His audio cut off at the end.

21 BY MS. FOSTER:

22 **Q.** Could you repeat the last sentence?

23 **A.** Yeah. It's a balance, because I made a decision -- you
 24 always have to balance what you can legally do and ethically
 25 what your responsibilities are to your subjects. At this

62

1 point my character was a person who lived in Brooklyn
 2 Center, so I was thinking about maybe if it became known
 3 that she had a journalist over, she would maybe be targeted
 4 by law enforcement or something like that. So with that in
 5 mind, I decided to be less visible to law enforcement and
 6 film from a distance so they couldn't see me.

7 MS. FOSTER: Were you able to catch that?

8 COURT REPORTER: Yes.

9 BY MS. FOSTER:

10 **Q.** Has anyone from the State contacted you to discuss what
 11 happened to you during the protests?

12 **A.** I got an e-mail I think around in the fall of 2020.

13 **Q.** Okay. Do you know who contacted you?

14 **A.** Yeah. His name was Jerry -- I don't know how to say his
 15 last name -- Cziok. It's C-zed-i-o-k.

16 **Q.** Okay. Did you respond to that e-mail?

17 **A.** No, I did not.

18 **Q.** Why not?

19 **A.** My company at that time, NBC News, told me not to.

20 **Q.** So your employer basically instructed you not to
 21 respond --

22 **A.** That's correct.

23 **Q.** -- is that what you are saying?

24 Okay. How long has it been since you were
 25 injured?

63

1 **A.** That was June or May 2020 and it is now July. So a year
 2 and a month or two.

3 **Q.** Has anyone from the State ever apologized to you for
 4 what happened?

5 **A.** No.

6 **Q.** Have you decided to join this lawsuit as a named
 7 plaintiff, Mr. Ou?

8 **A.** Yes.

9 **Q.** How would you describe your views towards law
 10 enforcement before the protests we've been talking about
 11 today?

12 **A.** Are we talking about the American context or --

13 **Q.** Yes. That's a good clarification.

14 **A.** Yeah. In the American context, I didn't think so much
 15 of law enforcement. In fact, I've actually -- the story I
 16 did before this, I embedded with a police department in
 17 San Antonio for quite a few months and worked on a
 18 documentary looking at a community police -- San Antonio
 19 Police Department going to mental health calls. So I
 20 didn't -- like, I had covered law enforcement and being
 21 around protests, you know, you're in their proximity, but I
 22 always operated under the assumption that, you know, if
 23 you're not getting in anyone's way, you had the right to
 24 film and, you know, just work. So I didn't really think
 25 much of it.

64

1 **Q.** How would you describe your relationship with the police
 2 in San Antonio that you covered during that -- when you were
 3 embedded with them?

4 **A.** It was quite good because these are mental health --
 5 these are police officers who are also trained in mental
 6 health, so they went to [audio distortion].

7 COURT REPORTER: He cut out again.

8 BY MS. FOSTER:

9 **Q.** You cut out. Sorry. I don't know why.

10 **A.** These are police officers who specialized in
 11 de-escalation, so they would go to places with mental health
 12 distress calls and they would, you know, use their
 13 de-escalation training and their mental health skills to
 14 kind of, like, de-escalate situations and then kind of,
 15 like, get people into services. So it was actually a really
 16 interesting thing to cover to show, you know, like, police
 17 doing their jobs at their best and kind of like an example
 18 for law enforcement to follow.

19 **Q.** When you cover a protest event, do you try to avoid bias
 20 towards any group?

21 **A.** Yes. That's the --

22 **Q.** And why is -- I'm sorry. Go ahead.

23 **A.** That's the foundation of what we do as journalists, is
 24 to report the truth without bias, you know, just report all
 25 sides of a story with nuance and kind of, like, report in a

65

1 balanced way.
 2 **Q.** How have the attacks that you experienced during the
 3 protests in Minneapolis affected your ability to continue
 4 doing your job as an objective observer?

5 **A.** In the American context it's difficult because it's hard
 6 to operate safely in a protest situation or in general when
 7 you don't know if someone will turn on you and attack you
 8 without having really done anything.

9 And so it has been a little bit difficult for me
 10 to know what's what, how to stay safe, how to not get in
 11 people's way, you know, just how to navigate coverage in
 12 America. It's actually been -- even now, a year and a bit
 13 later, it still has been quite difficult to navigate.

14 **Q.** How long did it take you to recover from your physical
 15 injuries?

16 **A.** My scar healed. I still have a scar right here
 17 (indicating) that you can see, but it took quite some time
 18 for all the pepper spray to get out of my hair. My eyes
 19 were quite affected and my breathing was affected for quite
 20 a few months afterwards. Some of my camera gear right now
 21 is still pepper spray-ee [phonetic]. So it took some time.
 22 And I have a scar here (indicating) that hasn't gone away.

23 **Q.** Would you say that you've recovered from the
 24 psychological impact?

25 **A.** No, I have not. It's hard because, you know, you don't

67

1 targeted because we were journalists. And because of that,
 2 now I don't [audio distortion] any protests.

3 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. He is cutting out.

4 BY MS. FOSTER:

5 **Q.** Could you repeat the very end of that?

6 **A.** So when you -- I don't feel safe covering protests or
 7 being around police because I don't know how to act anymore.
 8 Because what happened in Minneapolis on the 30th of May in
 9 2020, I was in what I thought -- it was almost like a
 10 textbook, the best place that we could have been. We had
 11 cover and we were in a group of people who were so clearly
 12 identified as journalists.

13 And I've replayed that over and over in my head to
 14 go -- to think to myself, like, where did we screw up, like,
 15 what did we do wrong. And that's a large part of what we do
 16 as journalists, is that we learn from our mistakes.

17 And any time things happen and when the stakes are
 18 even higher, like in Libya, where my colleagues have been
 19 killed, or in Syria, we take accidents and incidents and we
 20 kind of, like, think to ourselves, okay, what did we do
 21 wrong, how can we do things any differently.

22 And having thought about what happened in
 23 Minneapolis on the 30th of 2020, I don't know what the
 24 takeaway is. I don't know how I would have done anything
 25 differently. And because I don't have any -- other than to

68

1 want to make it about you, but it's hard because the things
 2 that happened really affect you. And, you know, like, even
 3 yesterday there was a thunderstorm where I was -- where I am
 4 at right now and just even hearing loud noises or, you know,
 5 seeing -- being in situations in large crowds, it's hard.
 6 It just makes you constantly, like, really nervous and not
 7 know how to be safe.

8 **Q.** Do you continue to experience fear when you cover events
 9 with a large law enforcement presence?

10 **A.** I do. I do because, yeah, I don't know how to act
 11 anymore. In the American context it used to be just make
 12 sure everyone knows that you are a journalist. I remember
 13 covering protests in New York with the NYPD where I would
 14 kind of go out of my way to, like, make eye contact with all
 15 the police and show them my camera so that they could have,
 16 like, some memory of me so that if there was, like, any
 17 incident, they would know that I was there. And so I think
 18 a lot of it is, like, make your intentions known so that
 19 you're not mistaken for anything other than a journalist.

20 But now, I guess after what happened on the 30th,
 21 in the American context I don't know what is safe anymore
 22 because at that moment I thought that we were in the perfect
 23 position. We were in a group of people. We were protected.
 24 We were out of the way. They could have easily passed us if
 25 they wanted to, but instead it almost felt like we were

1 just not have been there. And so because I don't -- I spent
 2 a year and two months really trying to figure out, like,
 3 what did we do wrong. And the fact that I don't have an
 4 answer to that makes me feel fundamentally unsafe covering
 5 protests or, you know, marches where there's law
 6 enforcement. Because if the answer is, well, just don't be
 7 a journalist and, like, just -- if you will be targeted no
 8 matter what you do, then, yeah, I feel quite unsafe.

9 MS. FOSTER: Thank you. I have no further
 10 questions.

11 THE COURT: Let's take our break at this point and
 12 then we will have our cross examination of this witness. So
 13 we will take a break now and I will ask everyone to be
 14 prepared to return at ten minutes after 11:00 Central
 15 Standard Time. So I believe that may be ten minutes after
 16 12:00 your time.

17 MS. FOSTER: He is in Europe.

18 THE COURT: Sorry. I was thinking New York. I'm
 19 quite provincial. So we will take a 15-minute break, and
 20 then please be ready to return on camera for your cross
 21 examination.

22 MS. FOSTER: You can keep it dialed in if you
 23 want, Ed. That might be the easiest.

24 THE COURT: Yes.

25 MS. FOSTER: So we don't have to reconnect.

	69		71
1	THE WITNESS: So 15 minutes, 1-5?	1	Precinct, that there were significant concerns that the
2	THE COURT: 1-5, yes.	2	Fifth Precinct, like the Third Precinct, would be set on
3	THE WITNESS: Okay.	3	fire?
4	THE COURT: We are in -- oh, I'm sorry. Is there	4	A. I was aware of the context of what had happened the days
5	anything else that we need to address at this time?	5	previous.
6	MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor.	6	Q. So you were aware at that time that the Third Precinct
7	THE COURT: Okay. Very well. We are in recess.	7	had been given up and had been set on fire?
8	(Recess taken at 10:56 a.m.)	8	A. Yes.
9	* * * *	9	Q. Okay. And you also testified that there were several
10	(11:13 a.m.)	10	law enforcement agencies present there in addition to
11	IN OPEN COURT	11	Minnesota State Patrol troopers?
12	THE COURT: We are ready to proceed.	12	A. Yes.
13	MS. LANDRUM: Yes, Your Honor.	13	Q. Now, you heard the dispersal orders before you were
14	THE COURT: You may. We are back on the record.	14	injured on May 30th; is that correct?
15	You may proceed, Counsel.	15	A. Yes.
16	MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.	16	Q. Those dispersal orders were fairly loud?
17	CROSS EXAMINATION	17	A. Yes.
18	BY MS. LANDRUM:	18	Q. And they were given over an acoustic device; is that
19	Q. Good morning, Mr. Ou. My name is Kathryn Iverson	19	correct?
20	Landrum. Can you hear me okay?	20	A. Yes.
21	A. Yeah, I can hear you.	21	Q. The protesters, however, based off of your personal
22	Q. Great. Wonderful. My name is Kathryn Iverson Landrum.	22	knowledge and the video footage that we saw, they did not
23	I'm an attorney representing the defendants, the Minnesota	23	disperse as directed, right?
24	Department of Public Safety and Minnesota State Patrol. I	24	A. Yes.
25	want to thank you for your testimony here today.	25	Q. And neither did you; is that right?
	70		72
1	I would like to start off with asking you about	1	A. Yes.
2	your experiences on May 30th that you just discussed with	2	Q. Is it your practice not to follow directives from law
3	us. First, you did not arrive in Minneapolis until May 30,	3	enforcement when you're covering protest activities?
4	2020; is that right?	4	A. We were under the understanding that the curfew did not
5	A. That is correct.	5	apply to us as media.
6	Q. That was several days after the unrest had erupted in	6	Q. I understand that that's your understanding of the legal
7	that area, correct?	7	posture there, but is it your practice, generally speaking,
8	A. Yes.	8	when an order is issued by law enforcement, that you do not
9	Q. And you did not begin your physical coverage in	9	follow those when you're covering a protest?
10	Minneapolis until, I believe, 6:30 or 7:00 that night?	10	A. We -- when we operate, you know, we operate under what
11	A. Yes.	11	we're allowed to do. And at that moment we were on public
12	Q. Now, you began your coverage located near the Fifth	12	property, also not getting in anyone's way, and so based off
13	Precinct in Minneapolis; is that correct?	13	my experience with the police in general is if the media
14	A. Yep.	14	makes themselves known and is not interfering, then we have
15	Q. Were you aware that there were significant concerns that	15	the right to be places because that's our job.
16	the Fifth Precinct, like the Third, would be set afire?	16	Q. So the answer to my question is, yes, you believe that
17	MS. FOSTER: Objection --	17	you are not required to follow the directives of law
18	THE WITNESS: I was --	18	enforcement when covering protests?
19	MS. FOSTER: -- assumes facts not in evidence.	19	MS. FOSTER: Objection, argumentative.
20	THE COURT: Overruled. You are asking what he	20	THE COURT: Sustained.
21	understood.	21	BY MS. LANDRUM:
22	MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.	22	Q. Now, you testified that you were somewhat close to
23	BY MS. LANDRUM:	23	protesters, is that right, when the dispersal order was
24	Q. I will ask the question again, Mr. Ou. Were you aware	24	granted -- or given?
25	at that time, when you located yourself at the Fifth	25	A. Yeah.

73

1 **Q.** About 12 to 15 feet away from protesters when the
 2 dispersal order was granted -- or given?
 3 **A.** I guess somewhat -- so we were, by the time that they
 4 had granted -- they were saying that, we were off to the
 5 side, as I remember.
 6 **Q.** Now, when you were off to the side, you were technically
 7 between law enforcement and the protesters, is that correct,
 8 off to the side but between the law enforcement line and the
 9 line of protesters; is that correct?
 10 **A.** We were behind the alcoves, so we were physically in
 11 between. If the protesters are here (indicating) and we
 12 were here (indicating), we were here but behind alcoves.
 13 **Q.** Understood. Stated differently, when that law
 14 enforcement line started to move forward, you did not
 15 disperse north with the protesters; is that correct?
 16 **A.** North is towards 31st, right? So, yes, that's true, we
 17 did not, yes.
 18 **Q.** Instead you attempted to stay in an alcove to the side?
 19 **A.** Yes. We thought that they would [audio distortion].
 20 **Q.** And ultimately if that --
 21 MS. LANDRUM: Sorry.
 22 THE COURT: I didn't hear what the witness said.
 23 Would you please repeat your response?
 24 THE WITNESS: Yeah. We were in the alcoves
 25 thinking they would pass us, the state troopers.

74

1 BY MS. LANDRUM:
 2 **Q.** And so you were intending to locate yourself behind that
 3 line of law enforcement as they were moving north, that was
 4 your intention?
 5 **A.** At that exact -- it depends on when you are referring
 6 to. This is quite a dynamic situation. But we were
 7 intending to stay out of the way in these alcoves, yes.
 8 **Q.** So then at that point, had that been successful, you
 9 would have been facing -- you would have been further away
 10 from the protesters and you would have been looking at the
 11 law enforcement line from behind?
 12 **A.** Yes.
 13 MS. LANDRUM: I would like to pull up Plaintiffs'
 14 Exhibit 14, please, if we may, Ms. Kosek, which has already
 15 been entered into evidence, specifically at 49 seconds.
 16 BY MS. LANDRUM:
 17 **Q.** And while we are pulling that up, Mr. Ou, I believe you
 18 testified earlier this morning that persons who are
 19 livestreaming during a protest are considered members of the
 20 media. Did I hear that correctly?
 21 **A.** I think people who are engaged in acts of journalism are
 22 members of the media.
 23 **Q.** So it's your testimony that every person who is holding
 24 up a personal cell phone and livestreaming or taking
 25 photographs with their cell phone would be a member of the

1 media?
 2 **A.** That or exercising their First Amendment right to film.
 3 **Q.** Okay. And you testified that you didn't see anybody on
 4 that day, May 30, 2020, who was a member of the media that
 5 was in any way antagonizing towards the Minnesota State
 6 Patrol. Did I hear that correctly?
 7 **A.** Yeah.
 8 **Q.** Okay. We will wait to pull up Exhibit 14.
 9 (Pause)
 10 **Q.** You had testified that immediately prior to the law
 11 enforcement line moving north on Nicollet, that there were a
 12 couple of individuals that were somewhat antagonistic
 13 towards the Minnesota State Patrol and yelling obscenities;
 14 is that correct?
 15 **A.** [Inaudible.]
 16 THE COURT: I didn't hear your response.
 17 THE WITNESS: Yes.
 18 MS. LANDRUM: And this is, for the record,
 19 49 seconds into Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14.
 20 BY MS. LANDRUM:
 21 **Q.** Are these the individuals that were yelling those
 22 obscenities?
 23 **A.** Yeah, and off a bit, I guess, to where the right area
 24 would be.
 25 **Q.** And this individual that we see at 49 seconds, do you

75

1 see there it appears that he is either taking a photograph
 2 or possibly livestreaming; would you agree?
 3 **A.** Yes.
 4 **Q.** Do you recognize that individual?
 5 **A.** No.
 6 **Q.** Do you recognize him as being a member of the media?
 7 **A.** No. I don't know who that person is.
 8 **Q.** But it's your position that he is media based off the
 9 fact that he is holding up his phone in this image of your
 10 video?
 11 **A.** At this moment he's taking a picture. I don't know who
 12 he is.
 13 **Q.** Now, at this moment this gentleman is between other
 14 protesters that are farther north on Nicollet and the line
 15 of police officers that are south; is that correct?
 16 **A.** Can you say that one more time?
 17 **Q.** Sorry. So at this point this gentleman that we see here
 18 in Exhibit 14 has positioned himself between -- directly
 19 between the protesters that are north of him and the law
 20 enforcement officials that are south of him, correct?
 21 **A.** Yes.
 22 **Q.** And that's contrary to one of your primary rules as a
 23 journalist, is that right, not to get in between the
 24 protesters and law enforcement?
 25 **A.** Who are you talking about in this exact context, like

<p>1 what is contrary to?</p> <p>2 Q. I am talking about the gentleman that we see here at 3 49 seconds in Exhibit 14. He has placed himself directly 4 between protesters and law enforcement, correct?</p> <p>5 A. Yes.</p> <p>6 Q. And that's contrary to your rule as a journalist to 7 never, in fact, do that?</p> <p>8 A. That's inaccurate. We would be in those positions when 9 it's safe. So I would very feasibly be in that position and 10 then retreat to [audio distortion].</p> <p>11 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. He's cutting out.</p> <p>12 THE COURT: Your voice is cutting out. Our audio 13 is not helping us right now. So I don't know what 14 adjustments can be made, but we did not hear your response.</p> <p>15 THE WITNESS: I would be possibly, you know -- 16 it's not a hard-and-fast rule to never get in between. Like 17 I said previously, we would be in that position if we felt 18 that that was a safe place to be at that exact moment and 19 maybe would get a shot or, you know, shoot what we need to 20 shoot and then go somewhere else that was safer. So a lot 21 of times it's these calculations that we make as we read the 22 situation.</p> <p>23 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>24 Q. You don't have any expertise in law enforcement; is that 25 right, Mr. Ou?</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">77</p> <p>1 moment," and then what did you say?</p> <p>2 THE WITNESS: At that moment it did not feel 3 tense. These people -- the protesters were saying things 4 that were antagonistic, but there was nothing being thrown. 5 And, you know, saying profanities towards the police at that 6 moment, in my assessment, was not -- would not -- did not 7 meet a threshold that, oh, something is going to happen 8 because of this, because there are profanities. So I 9 assessed at that moment for myself that it was still quite 10 calm.</p> <p>11 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>12 Q. But that, again, is not based on any law enforcement 13 expertise or training that you have, right, Mr. Ou?</p> <p>14 A. No, it's not, but I guess it comes from just knowing or 15 thinking of when there would be a proportionate response 16 from law enforcement and not to be in the middle of that if 17 there was one.</p> <p>18 Q. Now, at a certain point -- we heard about the injuries 19 that you sustained that day. You became separated from the 20 other journalists in your group; is that right?</p> <p>21 A. I became separated from my colleagues, like, my direct 22 colleague, the reporter I was working with and the security 23 team. So, yeah, we got separated, but I was with other 24 colleagues, like, who were not working with NBC News but 25 were fellow journalists.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">78</p> <p>1 A. No, I'm not a law enforcement officer.</p> <p>2 Q. So when you're making calculations as to when it's 3 appropriate for you to get in between law enforcement and 4 protest activity, that's based off of your assessment of 5 your personal safety?</p> <p>6 A. Yes, and that's [audio distortion].</p> <p>7 Q. And that's not --</p> <p>8 COURT REPORTER: I heard, "Yes, and that's." I 9 didn't hear what he said after.</p> <p>10 THE COURT: Did you have more to say in your 11 response?</p> <p>12 THE WITNESS: Yeah. Sorry. That's based off of, 13 you know, my experience covering protests.</p> <p>14 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>15 Q. So outside of your personal factor -- your own personal 16 safety, you are not factoring in the law enforcement needs 17 when you are deciding to insert yourself in between 18 protesters and law enforcement?</p> <p>19 A. We are thinking of how we're perceived and we are 20 thinking of, like, at that moment is it tense, is it more 21 tense, is there -- you know, like, I think you are always 22 making a calculation as to how appropriate would a law 23 enforcement response be. And at that moment it felt 24 [audio distortion].</p> <p>25 THE COURT: I didn't hear what you said. "At that</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">80</p> <p>1 Q. And I think you testified that after you experienced 2 your initial injuries, that you were blinded at that point; 3 is that right?</p> <p>4 A. Yes.</p> <p>5 Q. But based off of your other senses, it was your 6 experience or your belief that you were being corralled 7 north towards the protesters; is that correct?</p> <p>8 A. Yes.</p> <p>9 Q. And that was the movement of that enforcement line, 10 correct, that law enforcement was moving to disperse 11 everyone north; is that correct?</p> <p>12 A. Yes.</p> <p>13 Q. So your experience was that those law enforcement 14 officers were attempting to move you north as well?</p> <p>15 A. Yes, that is accurate.</p> <p>16 Q. But you, in fact, did not move out of that dispersal 17 area, did you?</p> <p>18 A. At which moment?</p> <p>19 Q. So ultimately you ended up back in the alcove; is that 20 correct?</p> <p>21 A. Just timeline-wise, we were in the alcoves off to the 22 side and when I was first hit by a projectile, I was already 23 disoriented, so I was unable to kind of, like, figure out 24 where to go. So I went further into the alcove thinking 25 that the police, if they want to disperse people, they would</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">81</p> <p>1 just -- they had the option to pass us and we were out of 2 the way.</p> <p>3 Q. So you remained in the area that law enforcement was 4 attempting to disperse, right?</p> <p>5 A. Yes.</p> <p>6 Q. Now -- let's see here. And after that point you had 7 other interactions with law enforcement; is that right? You 8 were asking for help; is that -- did I hear that correctly?</p> <p>9 A. So I just want to clarify. There were kind of, like, 10 two alcoves. The first time when I was pepper-sprayed, that 11 was alcove number one. And then we were corralled and then 12 we tried to get out to 31st Street, but then I ended up in 13 another alcove. I don't know if it's an alcove, but a 14 trapped, fenced-off area.</p> <p>15 And so that's -- the interaction happened twice. 16 So the first time I was pepper-sprayed and then corralled 17 from the alcoves, which is where we are looking at right now 18 in this area on the screenshot. And then a second time I 19 interacted with the police again, that's when -- that's 20 around that time that I filmed my colleague being shoved 21 over a wall and that's -- yes, I interacted with them.</p> <p>22 Q. But that second alcove was still in the dispersal area, 23 right, Mr. Ou?</p> <p>24 A. Yes, the second place was in the dispersal area. At 25 that time we were trying to leave, but there was nowhere to</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">83</p> <p>1 Q. So I would like to talk to you next about your coverage 2 in Brooklyn Center.</p> <p>3 Now, I heard that prior to coming to Brooklyn 4 Center you were preparing to cover the Chauvin trial 5 verdict; is that right?</p> <p>6 A. Yes.</p> <p>7 Q. In anticipation of that, did you attend the Operation 8 Safety Net press briefings that were happening weekly?</p> <p>9 A. No. There were a few things on YouTube or on Twitter, 10 if I understand, that were -- that I watched a few times, 11 but I did not physically attend.</p> <p>12 Q. Okay. So then you did see guidance from OSN in order to 13 prepare for your coverage of the Chauvin verdict?</p> <p>14 A. I wouldn't use the word "guidance" because, you know, as 15 journalists we monitor, we look at what's been tweeted out, 16 press conferences and stuff like that. So a lot of that is 17 passive. And it's our job to be informed of what people are 18 saying.</p> <p>19 Q. But it sounds like you were fully aware that OSN was 20 reaching out in order to provide resources to the press in 21 anticipation of the Chauvin verdict; is that right?</p> <p>22 A. As someone, just to be -- OSN, I am not familiar with 23 that acronym and, again, I'm based in New York, so I don't 24 regularly cover the Minneapolis/Minnesota state area, so I 25 don't know what that -- can you clarify that acronym?</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">82</p> <p>1 go, so that's when, I guess -- when I filmed my colleague, 2 Mike Shum, being shoved over the wall. If that is the idea 3 of how we are to disperse, it felt like a very dangerous 4 one.</p> <p>5 Q. So you indicated that after that point your vision was 6 substantially impaired, correct?</p> <p>7 A. Yes.</p> <p>8 Q. And in that state of impairment, it sounds like you had 9 some other interactions with other law enforcement 10 officials, right?</p> <p>11 A. Yes.</p> <p>12 Q. But at that point -- and you recognize that there were 13 other law enforcement officials on the ground outside of 14 Minnesota State Patrol, correct?</p> <p>15 A. Yes. Is the question do I know if there was different 16 police departments, like MPD, et cetera?</p> <p>17 Q. Yes, that were present on the ground on May 20, 2020 18 where you were.</p> <p>19 A. Yes.</p> <p>20 Q. Now, you didn't file a complaint with the Department of 21 Public Safety Office of Internal Affairs, did you?</p> <p>22 A. No.</p> <p>23 Q. And when the Office of Internal Affairs reached out to 24 you, you didn't respond; is that correct?</p> <p>25 A. That's correct.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">84</p> <p>1 Q. Sorry. I thought that you had said that you had seen 2 some of the YouTube videos from Operation Safety Net, 3 specifically the press briefings that were being given on a 4 weekly basis. Did I mishear that?</p> <p>5 A. Again, I would see them every so often, but it's not 6 like I regularly sought them out. When you are on Twitter, 7 you just see videos. And especially when you are in 8 New York, you are not making a distinction between this 9 police department, that one, Brooklyn Center, Minneapolis. 10 It kind of -- it just depends on -- you get more specific as 11 you get closer to what you are covering.</p> <p>12 Q. Did you reach out to anyone, Minnesota State Patrol, the 13 Department of Public Safety, to get guidance about how you 14 can be safe for purposes of the Chauvin trial coverage?</p> <p>15 A. No, because it was pretty -- we shouldn't have to. 16 Again, my understanding is as long as we're not interfering 17 with police activities or law enforcement activities, 18 there's no permissions or things to seek to be safe other 19 than just use your common sense and don't -- you know, like, 20 that's not something that we, as journalists, generally 21 should have to do.</p> <p>22 Q. So you covered the unrest in Brooklyn Center from an 23 apartment building; is that right?</p> <p>24 A. Yes.</p> <p>25 Q. How many days were you there?</p>

85

1 **A.** I was there for the duration of the week. I got there,
 2 I think, on a Monday or a Tuesday and I was there for a few
 3 days in and out.

4 **Q.** So in the video, I believe it's Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8,
 5 you could hear quite clearly the dispersal order; is that
 6 right?

7 **A.** Yes.

8 **Q.** And it was loud?

9 **A.** Yes.

10 **Q.** And it was -- it specifically indicated and instructed
 11 media that the dispersal order did, in fact, apply to media;
 12 is that right?

13 **A.** I -- as journalists, we are there to be able to cover
 14 things. And the other thing, too, is from my exact vantage
 15 point, I was in private property, so I wasn't outside.

16 **Q.** Going back to my question, though, Mr. Ou, that
 17 dispersal order specifically instructed you, as a member of
 18 media, that the dispersal order did, in fact, apply to you,
 19 correct?

20 **A.** Yes, that is true, except we, as journalists, should be
 21 in places -- where the freedom of the press is recognized,
 22 we should be able to film activities so long as we are not
 23 interfering with law enforcement or taking a part in
 24 anything. And so --

25 **Q.** Let me just stop you there.

86

1 THE COURT: No. Let him respond to your question
 2 and then you may ask a follow-up.

3 You may finish your response.

4 THE WITNESS: So in a lot of places, not just in
 5 protests, like a lot of the times as journalists we are
 6 often told, like, don't film here, get out of here,
 7 et cetera, by law enforcement. And it's just a central
 8 tenet to the First Amendment, which is if we are filming on
 9 public property, we, the media, are allowed to undertake our
 10 job, which is why, as I understand it, you know, we are
 11 exempt from curfew. During COVID we were able to go out
 12 because our job is a very specific function of keeping an
 13 open society informed. And so that dispersal order, I felt,
 14 did not apply to us because it is clear that we didn't need
 15 to recognize the curfew.

16 BY MS. LANDRUM:

17 **Q.** Well, so because you heard the dispersal order, though,
 18 Mr. Ou, you could not have been confused that law
 19 enforcement believed that media was subject to the --

20 MS. FOSTER: Objection --

21 **Q.** -- dispersal order, correct?

22 MS. FOSTER: -- argumentative.

23 THE COURT: Overruled. You may answer if you can.

24 THE WITNESS: Sorry. Can you say that one more
 25 time?

88

1 BY MS. LANDRUM:

2 **Q.** Absolutely. Because of the nature of the dispersal
 3 order, because of the content of it, where it specifically
 4 said that the dispersal order applied to media, you were not
 5 confused that law enforcement believed that you were, in
 6 fact, subject to the dispersal order, right?

7 **A.** Right, but, again, there's two things at play. I was in
 8 private property at that exact moment, so I don't know where
 9 I would have gone. And that certainly did not apply to me
 10 at that moment because what would they tell me, that I would
 11 not be able to interview people in their homes? That would
 12 be a gross violation of many press freedoms and the First
 13 Amendment, to say I am not allowed to interview citizens in
 14 their apartments where I am directly invited. So it did not
 15 apply to [audio distortion].

16 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear the last part.

17 THE COURT: The last bit we didn't hear. Did you
 18 say so it did not apply to me that way?

19 THE WITNESS: At that exact moment. Because
 20 how -- in what open, free society would the police tell me
 21 that I couldn't be in someone's private property at that
 22 moment? So that's why -- again, I was in someone's house,
 23 invited, filming from private property, so I was already not
 24 outside.

25 BY MS. LANDRUM:

1 **Q.** Mr. Ou, did you review the governor's executive order
 2 declaring the curfew in April 2021 before you came to
 3 Brooklyn Center?

4 **A.** I didn't personally look at it, but in talking to
 5 colleagues, you know, et cetera, I knew generally what was
 6 happening.

7 **Q.** So you weren't aware, then, that that executive order
 8 specifically stated that even persons exempted from the
 9 dispersal order were not exempted from lawful orders from
 10 law enforcement, right?

11 **A.** I don't understand.

12 **Q.** So you were not aware that that executive order
 13 specifically stated that even if exempt from the curfew,
 14 individuals that had that exemption were not exempt from
 15 lawful orders from law enforcement, you were not aware of
 16 that; is that right?

17 **A.** I'm aware of that, but, again, I was in someone's
 18 private property. So just if I were to take that to its
 19 logical conclusion, if I rented a flat or an apartment
 20 across from there, would -- no law enforcement would have
 21 been able to tell me to stop filming or not exist -- I could
 22 very easily have had a flat there. And so I just don't
 23 understand. It didn't apply to me, because if we're in a
 24 world where the police can tell journalists to stop filming,
 25 this is not America.

<p>1 MS. LANDRUM: I would like to pull up Plaintiffs' 2 Exhibit 8 at 16 seconds, please, Ms. Kosek. 3 BY MS. LANDRUM: 4 Q. This is Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8. This is a video that's 5 already been admitted into evidence. This is the view that 6 you have from that apartment; is that correct? 7 A. Yes. 8 Q. Now, in this still image at 16 seconds, you can see a 9 line of law enforcement to the left, right? 10 A. Yes. 11 Q. And then it looks like there's protesters to the right. 12 What was beyond this scene to the right? Were there several 13 more protesters to the right? 14 A. If you were looking where I'm looking now and you were 15 to pivot to, let's say, 2:00 to the right, as I recall, 16 there was kind of like a clump of people who were protesters 17 and then, like, that's, like, kind of, like, right up to the 18 fence area but a bit further down the street, and then there 19 were kind of people here and there. 20 Q. So, then, these individuals that we see here at 21 16 seconds -- for example, we see someone holding up a phone 22 who may be livestreaming or taking a photo, right? 23 A. Yeah. 24 Q. And it looks like there might be a gentleman with a 25 camera of some kind near him?</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">89</p> <p>1 like that. So if I were there in that spot, if someone were 2 to escalate that, it would be the police because I would -- 3 we're not getting in between anything. As I remember, at 4 that exact moment, and, again, many things happened that 5 night, it was mostly people filming the police and a lot of 6 the clashes or the more escalated actions of protesters were 7 to the [audio distortion].</p> <p>8 COURT REPORTER: I'm sorry. I didn't --</p> <p>9 THE COURT: The protesters were where when things 10 escalated?</p> <p>11 THE WITNESS: Like at this exact moment, if you 12 were to just take the exact dead center of this frame as, 13 like, 12:00, I would say 2:00 or 3:00, kind of maybe to the 14 right, that's where a lot of the protesters were -- like 15 protester protesters and then people were throwing things 16 and bottles at the police and stuff. Here the law 17 enforcement was [audio distortion].</p> <p>18 THE COURT: I didn't hear the last bit. "Here the 19 law enforcement," and then you could not be heard.</p> <p>20 THE WITNESS: People here were being filmed by 21 these people on the bottom, like the law enforcement on the 22 left.</p> <p>23 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>24 Q. And I think I heard you just testify that you witnessed 25 that individuals were throwing bottles and other objects at</p>
<p>1 A. Yes.</p> <p>2 Q. Would you agree with me that these individuals are 3 placing themselves between law enforcement and the 4 protesters?</p> <p>5 A. Yes.</p> <p>6 Q. Is it possible that they themselves are protesters?</p> <p>7 A. At this moment it looks like they're filming, so 8 they're -- they have a phone.</p> <p>9 Q. Did you recognize these people, as you were there on the 10 scene, as colleagues of yours?</p> <p>11 A. I saw colleagues there, but at this exact moment I was 12 in private property filming from an apartment, so I didn't 13 personally know these individuals.</p> <p>14 Q. And doesn't this again violate your general rule not to 15 get between protesters and law enforcement?</p> <p>16 A. I'm not these people over here. So are you asking me if 17 that's something that I would do or --</p> <p>18 Q. Exactly. I'm saying these two individuals that appear 19 to be taking photos or livestreaming, if they would be 20 violating your rule getting -- if they are, in fact, 21 journalists, if they are getting in between the law 22 enforcement line and the protesters.</p> <p>23 A. I would say at this moment, because there isn't anything 24 being actively -- there's no hostility at this moment. It's 25 not like behind them anyone is throwing rocks or anything</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">90</p> <p>1 law enforcement; is that right?</p> <p>2 A. Yes.</p> <p>3 Q. Now, you said at a certain point that a law enforcement 4 official pointed something at you from the ground; is that 5 right?</p> <p>6 A. Yes.</p> <p>7 Q. But you don't know what that object was?</p> <p>8 A. No. It was cylindrical.</p> <p>9 Q. And you don't know which law enforcement agency was 10 represented by this individual?</p> <p>11 A. No, I don't.</p> <p>12 Q. And you were not harmed in any way by law enforcement in 13 April 2021 in Brooklyn Center, were you?</p> <p>14 A. No, I was not.</p> <p>15 Q. Thank you.</p> <p>16 MS. LANDRUM: No further questions.</p> <p>17 THE COURT: Anything further for this witness?</p> <p>18 MS. FOSTER: Just very brief redirect.</p> <p>19 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>20 MS. FOSTER: I would like to call up the long</p> <p>21 video. I think that's Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14.</p> <p>22 (Video recording played)</p> <p>23 MS. FOSTER: We can stop there at 42, 42 seconds.</p> <p>24</p> <p>25</p>

	93		95
1	REDIRECT EXAMINATION		per photo and then they put them in their publication.
2	BY MS. FOSTER:	2	Q. Where do you currently live?
3	Q. On that recording you heard the announcement to	3	A. I live in Hayward, California, which is out near
4	disperse. Did they say to disperse because of being in	4	Oakland.
5	violation of a curfew?	5	Q. And where geographically do you work as a photographer?
6	A. Yes.	6	A. All over the place. I shoot concerts. I shoot events,
7	Q. Was it your understanding that the curfew did not apply	7	shoot weddings. I shoot journalism. I go wherever the work
8	to journalists?	8	is, wherever the story is, wherever I can.
9	A. Yes.	9	Q. How do you decide where to go?
10	Q. Is that the reason why you did not disperse?	10	A. This last year has been very different for me. Concerts
11	A. That is correct.	11	and events were taken away, so I had to find a way to adapt.
12	MS. FOSTER: No further questions, Your Honor.	12	So I started covering protests and I went where the story
13	THE COURT: Anything further for this witness?	13	was. I tried to encapsulate different areas, mostly around
14	MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor. Thank you.	14	social justice, you know, police brutality protests in
15	THE COURT: May the witness be excused?	15	general.
16	MS. FOSTER: Yes, Your Honor, the witness may be	16	Q. How far in advance do you decide where you're going to
17	excused. Thank you.	17	go?
18	THE COURT: Sir, you are excused. Thank you.	18	A. This really depends. Some events, like the march on
19	THE WITNESS: Thank you. Do I leave or --	19	Washington, I planned to be at a couple months ahead of
20	MS. FOSTER: Just leave the Zoom session.	20	time. I was out here covering the Derek Chauvin trial. I
21	THE WITNESS: Okay.	21	planned to do that. But mostly it's kind of on the fly.
22	MS. McGARRAUGH: Your Honor, are you ready for us	22	And I have a lot of other friends that -- for instance, when
23	to proceed with our next witness?	23	Daunte Wright was killed, he flew out the next morning. So
24	THE COURT: Yes, please.	24	it's one of those things where you can't really plan very
25	MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs call Chris Tuite.	25	well where you're going to be. You just have to go where
	94		96
1	COURT REPORTER: Remain standing and raise your	1	the story is. And it makes it very tricky planning flights,
2	right hand, please.	2	planning hotels, but also very tricky, you know, making
3	(Witness sworn)	3	accommodations on where you are going to be.
4	COURT REPORTER: If you could state your full	4	Q. If you were required to apply for city or state press
5	name, spelling your first and last name, please.	5	credentials in advance, would that be practical with the
6	THE WITNESS: Christopher David Tuite. First name	6	schedule?
7	Christopher, C-h-r-i-s-t-o-p-h-e-r. Last name Tuite,	7	A. No, not in my opinion at all. I don't believe that
8	T-u-i-t-e.	8	press credentials are standard in any way. There are
9	(Christopher Tuite)	9	certain cities, like New York, that does it, but it requires
10	DIRECT EXAMINATION	10	quite a while to apply. Like if I was able to do this, I
11	BY MS. McGARRAUGH:	11	wouldn't be able to have been in Minnesota, Brooklyn Center.
12	Q. Thank you, Mr. Tuite. What is your profession?	12	I'm up to Portland kind of on a whim. I spent four days up
13	A. I'm a freelance photographer.	13	there. There's no way I could have applied and been able to
14	Q. What publications have your photographs been published	14	be out there covering, documenting anything.
15	in?	15	Q. So you mentioned earlier that you were in Minneapolis
16	A. New York Times, New York Post, Washington Post, Rolling	16	covering the Derek Chauvin trial. When did you arrive in
17	Stone, Time magazine, People magazine, Wall Street Journal,	17	Minneapolis?
18	FOX News, CNN, lots of places.	18	A. I arrived on March 27th. I was there for an entire
19	Q. Are you employed by any particular news organization?	19	month.
20	A. I'm not.	20	Q. Of 2021?
21	Q. How do your photographs end up in these publications?	21	A. Correct.
22	A. I work for a place that's called the wire, a place	22	Q. And you were there for a month. So until late April
23	called imageSPACE, and from imageSPACE my photos get pushed	23	of --
24	out to lots of other places, Associated Press, ZUMA. And	24	A. Yes.
25	then publications that want to run things, they buy things	25	Q. -- 2021?

97

1 So you were present in the Twin Cities when the
 2 Daunte Wright protests came up?
 3 **A.** I was. I was covering another protest in St. Paul and
 4 the word got out that Daunte Wright had been killed. We
 5 went directly from there to the area he was killed and then
 6 followed the protests to the Brooklyn Center Police
 7 Department.
 8 **Q.** What days or nights did you cover the protests in
 9 Brooklyn Center related to Daunte Wright?
 10 **A.** I covered the entire thing until numbers got very small.
 11 So it would be seven or eight days I was out there every
 12 single day and night covering, documenting everything.
 13 **Q.** Okay. I would like to walk through some of the
 14 experiences that you had in Brooklyn Center.
 15 **A.** Sure.
 16 **Q.** So, first, what law enforcement agencies did you observe
 17 there?
 18 **A.** State troopers. I observed National Guard. I observed
 19 the sheriff's department. I observed what appeared to be
 20 Brooklyn Center Police Department, but they were usually a
 21 little ways away. There was a fence after the first night,
 22 and they were generally out towards the building and they
 23 weren't very identifiable.
 24 **Q.** How did you recognize state troopers?
 25 **A.** They were very recognizable. They had the long-sleeve

99

1 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:
 2 **Q.** Have you had a chance to look at that Exhibit 3?
 3 **A.** Yeah. I will flip all the way through.
 4 (Witness reviews exhibit)
 5 **A.** Okay.
 6 **Q.** Do you recognize this exhibit?
 7 **A.** Yes, I do. This is my Instagram posts that I was
 8 covering from this specific day.
 9 **Q.** When you say "this specific day," you mean Tuesday,
 10 April 13th?
 11 **A.** Correct. When I make my posts, I go home at night, I
 12 have a chance to cull my photos, which means go through the
 13 photos, select them, dump my photos onto the hard drive, and
 14 then I essentially write a little post that summarizes the
 15 day's events.
 16 **Q.** Okay. This first page -- actually, let me go back. So
 17 this says, "April 14"?

100

18 **A.** Yes.
 19 **Q.** Why does it say, "April 14" on --
 20 **A.** It was done after midnight. By the time I got home,
 21 took a Lyft ride back to --
 22 MR. HSU: Objection. The witness is testifying to
 23 a document not submitted in evidence.
 24 MS. McGARRAUGH: Fair point. Plaintiffs offer --
 25 THE COURT: Sustained. Do you wish to offer the

98

1 yellow arms. They had the state logo on the chest. You
 2 could see them in the daytime. In the night it would
 3 really, really reflect with the police lights or flashlights
 4 or whatever. They were very, very identifiable.
 5 **Q.** All right. I would like to direct your attention
 6 specifically to the evening of Tuesday, April 13th. Do you
 7 recall that evening?
 8 **A.** I do.
 9 **Q.** Were you in Brooklyn Center?
 10 **A.** I was.
 11 MS. McGARRAUGH: All right. I would like to pull
 12 up Plaintiffs' Exhibit 3. Can he see it on his screen?
 13 THE WITNESS: Yeah.
 14 MS. McGARRAUGH: Okay. Great. Leslie, do you
 15 mind scrolling through this for him so he can see the pages?
 16 THE COURT: Let's just stop right here. Can you
 17 turn on my screen?
 18 LAW CLERK: You can't see it?
 19 (Pause)
 20 THE COURT: Thank you. You may proceed, Counsel.
 21 MS. McGARRAUGH: Your Honor, may I approach and
 22 give him the book? It will be easier for him to see the
 23 multipage exhibit.
 24 THE COURT: Yes, you may.
 25 (Witness reviews exhibit)

exhibit?
 2 MS. McGARRAUGH: I do. Plaintiffs offer
 3 Exhibit 3.
 4 MR. HSU: We would object to the admission as
 5 hearsay.
 6 THE COURT: Any response?
 7 MS. McGARRAUGH: Well, so --
 8 THE COURT: Is it offered for the truth of the
 9 matter asserted or is it offered --
 10 MS. McGARRAUGH: So the caption on the first page
 11 is offered only to refresh his recollection. And the
 12 photographs, I think, are not hearsay, and it's my
 13 understanding that the hearsay rule doesn't necessarily
 14 apply in a preliminary injunction hearing with the
 15 limitation on witnesses. And the Court certainly can take
 16 the evidence for, you know, what its weight deserves.
 17 THE COURT: Do you wish to be heard, sir?
 18 MR. HSU: We would state even the photographs are
 19 paired with the written commentary related to the event and,
 20 accordingly, the whole document would be submitting hearsay
 21 statements. And while the burden may differ from an
 22 injunction, the admissibility of evidence is still a key
 23 aspect.
 24 THE COURT: The objection is overruled. You may
 25 proceed. It is admitted.

<p style="text-align: right;">101</p> <p>1 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:</p> <p>2 Q. So you made this post in the early morning hours of</p> <p>3 April 14th?</p> <p>4 A. That's correct.</p> <p>5 Q. All right. During that evening did you hear any</p> <p>6 dispersal orders in Brooklyn Center?</p> <p>7 A. Yes, I did.</p> <p>8 Q. Can you tell -- what did those dispersal orders sound</p> <p>9 like?</p> <p>10 A. They were generally given over some sort of a loud</p> <p>11 speaker. I believe it was a mobile loud speaker that one of</p> <p>12 them was carrying, one of the state police officers, state</p> <p>13 troopers. They formed a line out coming from the south side</p> <p>14 of the department on the street of about, I would say, a</p> <p>15 hundred officers. They were saying people need to disperse.</p> <p>16 They were very specifically focusing on media. They said,</p> <p>17 "Media need to leave the area." They said it nearly 50</p> <p>18 times over the loud speaker. And being a journalist, I</p> <p>19 believe I know my rights and I did not disperse because I</p> <p>20 needed to be there to document what's happening in public.</p> <p>21 Q. So you said that order was given maybe 50 times. Over</p> <p>22 what period of time?</p> <p>23 A. I would say an hour or so.</p> <p>24 Q. Do you have a sense -- excuse me. You referred to a</p> <p>25 line of maybe a hundred officers. Were those -- could you</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">103</p> <p>1 the grass. It created a fairly dangerous situation.</p> <p>2 Do you want me to proceed with what happened after</p> <p>3 that?</p> <p>4 Q. Sure, yeah. What happened next?</p> <p>5 A. So we got to the corner of the gas station across from</p> <p>6 the Pump N Munch. I actually in my first deposition said</p> <p>7 Pump N Munch. It's the one across the street from the</p> <p>8 Pump N Munch -- I wanted to correct that right now -- on the</p> <p>9 other corner.</p> <p>10 Q. When you said "deposition," do you mean declaration?</p> <p>11 A. Yes. Excuse me. Declaration. Sorry.</p> <p>12 We got up to the corner. I recognized a</p> <p>13 photographer. His name was Josh McFadden. He is a New York</p> <p>14 Times freelance photographer. He is based out of upstate</p> <p>15 New York and he was out here covering the entire trial as</p> <p>16 well as the Daunte Wright protests.</p> <p>17 We were trying to figure out a way to get out</p> <p>18 because it was very hectic. There were -- as soon as we</p> <p>19 turned the corner, there were cars that came screeching in,</p> <p>20 officers jumped out, including National Guard. Mostly the</p> <p>21 state troopers were around tackling people, grabbing them,</p> <p>22 saying, "Get on the ground," arresting people before they</p> <p>23 could actually disperse.</p> <p>24 Q. Were you able to get back to your car?</p> <p>25 A. Our car was on the -- actually, I came with Lyft, but I</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">102</p> <p>1 tell what agency they were affiliated with?</p> <p>2 A. Yes. They were state troopers. I believe every single</p> <p>3 one of them was. There might have been one in between that</p> <p>4 was not, but to my recollection, they were all state</p> <p>5 troopers.</p> <p>6 Q. Do you have any sense of -- well, from your observation,</p> <p>7 could you perceive what triggered the transition from 50</p> <p>8 dispersal orders to the line moving through?</p> <p>9 A. I'm sorry. Can you repeat that?</p> <p>10 Q. In your observation, what changed that went from 50</p> <p>11 dispersal orders being given over an hour to the line moving</p> <p>12 through?</p> <p>13 A. To them chasing people?</p> <p>14 Q. Yeah. What was -- what did you perceive the trigger to</p> <p>15 be?</p> <p>16 A. Well, I believe that they wanted to clear the area, but</p> <p>17 they waited a long time. It was an hour, hour and a half.</p> <p>18 It was essentially protesters expressing their displeasure</p> <p>19 verbally to the line of officers. It stayed fine.</p> <p>20 A small fire was started in the street,</p> <p>21 essentially like a campfire shape with some pieces of wood.</p> <p>22 The second that happened, all the troopers started rushing,</p> <p>23 running after people, and it chased everyone down, including</p> <p>24 cars. Cars were driving in the opposite direction. People</p> <p>25 were running north away from the area on the sidewalk, on</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">104</p> <p>1 asked him if I could get a ride earlier and he said that was</p> <p>2 fine. So I saw him. And it was a Good Samaritan that</p> <p>3 offered to give us a ride.</p> <p>4 Q. Why didn't you go to Mr. McFadden's car?</p> <p>5 A. His car was on the opposite side of the protest and it</p> <p>6 was all blocked by vehicles and state troopers. We were not</p> <p>7 allowed to go that direction. So I asked -- he actually</p> <p>8 asked for a ride and this lady said, "Sure, I'll give you a</p> <p>9 ride back." We hopped in the car, buckled our seat belts</p> <p>10 and were surrounded by state troopers with their weapons</p> <p>11 pulled screaming, "Get out of the vehicle, get out of the</p> <p>12 vehicle." And frantically I took my press pass, put it up</p> <p>13 to the window and screamed, "Press, press, press, press,</p> <p>14 press," like 50 times. One trooper grabbed me out. He</p> <p>15 actually listened to me, but they took Josh. He threw him</p> <p>16 up into the car, and it took me telling them 50 times he was</p> <p>17 also press and he was with me. He had also said, "Press" at</p> <p>18 least ten times, had it around his neck, very identifiable</p> <p>19 was press, multiple cameras on his sides.</p> <p>20 Q. Were you also carrying a camera at that time?</p> <p>21 A. I was.</p> <p>22 Q. How large is your camera?</p> <p>23 A. I have two. I have one with a bigger lens. So the</p> <p>24 bigger lens would have been about this big (indicating), and</p> <p>25 the other one is about that big (indicating) with the</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">105</p> <p>1 smaller lens because they -- very similar size. 2 THE COURT: You need to describe what "that big" 3 is. 4 THE WITNESS: Okay. The 70 to 200 millimeter lens 5 is used for medium and zoom range and it's about, I would 6 say, six to eight inches in length. The wider lenses I 7 have, I have a 17 to 35 millimeter and a 24 to 70. Those 8 are about three to five inches in length. I believe I had 9 the 24-70, which was probably four-ish inches. 10 BY MS. McGARRAUGH: 11 Q. And Mr. McFadden had similar equipment? 12 A. Yes. 13 Q. And you were wearing a press pass? 14 A. I was. 15 Q. What did that look like? 16 A. It was an independent pass. So this is the tricky thing 17 about not having standard passes and why it's not possible 18 to do this, because there's people that go all over the 19 place. They are assignment based and there's no 20 standardized press pass for people to get. So I have an 21 independent pass that was made up for me. It has my 22 picture, identifies me as independent press. That's 23 basically all it is. It has a little scanner on the 24 bottom that goes right to my social media on there. It just 25 has my picture as independent press on it.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">107</p> <p>1 perspective. 2 BY MS. McGARRAUGH: 3 Q. Are you confident that the officers that pulled you out 4 of that car are state troopers? 5 A. I am 100 percent confident. 6 Q. How do you know? 7 A. I saw the very identifiable sleeves with the Minnesota 8 state logo on their chest. 9 Q. How did that incident affect your ability to do your job 10 on that night? 11 A. Well, we had to leave the area. As soon as we got out 12 of the car, we were negotiating on how to get back to our 13 car. We didn't know how we were going to do that because 14 they closed off all the roads that got there. It was only 15 National Guard that offered to okay us to walk through this 16 specific area, and even the same time we walked very slowly. 17 What we did first, though, before we left, we went 18 into the church, which was a safe haven for protesters and 19 for everyone alike. We got a little bit of something to 20 drink and a snack. And Josh had to process his photos and 21 he had to take a few minutes to wind down from the 22 encounter. It shook him up a little bit. And he had to 23 send it to The New York Times and he had to text his editor 24 at The New York Times telling him what happened; and, of 25 course, they were concerned.</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">106</p> <p>1 Q. Did you have the opportunity to see Mr. McFadden's press 2 pass? 3 A. I did. It was a National Press Photographers 4 Association pass, which is a pretty standardized one, but 5 you have to apply to get it and it costs money to get. So 6 there's a barrier there, but anyone can get that. 7 Q. Did you perceive a difference in how your press 8 credentials were received versus his press credentials? 9 A. I don't know exactly why they listened to me. He did 10 the same thing I did. All I can tell you is that I am white 11 and he is black, and we are covering social justice 12 protests. 13 Q. Was it your impression that he was not believed that he 14 was a journalist? 15 A. That's my impression. He has spoken -- this happened to 16 him multiple times in other areas as well. 17 MR. HSU: Objection, hearsay. 18 THE COURT: Overruled. 19 THE WITNESS: This is a problem right now. A lot 20 of agencies are being criticized for not sending 21 African-American photographers to cover social justice 22 things and there's been a very conscious effort over the 23 last couple of years to make sure that they're included and 24 their voices are being heard and this sort of thing, and 25 they're not treated the same way in many situations from my</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">108</p> <p>1 So once we left the church, we talked to 2 the Guard. We obviously had to get back to our car. No one 3 was letting us go through here. Everything was blocked off. 4 They said, "That's fine." But the whole time we walked like 5 this (indicating). I had my pass up, hand out, because I 6 didn't want to spook anyone because we had to go back to an 7 area that was essentially closed all the way across the 8 protest. It was very uncomfortable. He was not 9 comfortable. I told him, "It will be okay. I'll go first. 10 I'll hold this." He's like, "I don't know about this." He 11 thought we were going to have an issue. And once that 12 happened, we got back to our car. I asked permission from 13 the Guard, "Can we leave here?" And he said, "Yes, you're 14 fine." 15 Q. Were you able to take photographs as you walked with 16 your hands up? 17 A. No. 18 Q. So you were not able to do your job during -- after that 19 portion of the evening? 20 A. (Shaking head.) 21 Q. I would like to move to the evening of April 16, 2021. 22 That's a Friday. Where were you on that evening? 23 A. I was at Brooklyn Center. 24 Q. What time did you arrive in Brooklyn Center? 25 A. I would say about 7:00.</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">109</p> <p>1 Q. What was the crowd like on that evening?</p> <p>2 A. There was a smaller number than the previous night. I 3 would say there was about 150 protesters out there. People 4 were mostly standing in place talking around the outside of 5 the fence. At this point, to my recollection, there was a 6 second fence that had been installed outside the department. 7 The first night we got there, the night that Daunte was 8 killed, there was no fence, so protesters got all the way up 9 to the department up in front. And then the next night we 10 came back, there was one fence there and then they had put a 11 secondary protective fence up at this point. So people were 12 kind of standing around. There were some umbrellas. People 13 were hanging out and chatting for the most part.</p> <p>14 Q. Did you see any fireworks?</p> <p>15 A. I did.</p> <p>16 Q. Did you see them -- what direction did they go off?</p> <p>17 A. Directly up or back behind the apartment complexes. So 18 they were straight up in the air. I actually have some 19 photos that were taken, you know, from those areas that were 20 just fireworks that were nowhere near the department that I 21 saw. They were mostly straight up.</p> <p>22 Q. Did you personally observe any fireworks fired in the 23 direction of law enforcement?</p> <p>24 A. I did not.</p> <p>25 Q. Did you observe anybody throwing bottles?</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">111</p> <p>1 Q. Okay. So going back to Friday night, did you hear any 2 dispersal orders on Friday night?</p> <p>3 A. Not that I recall.</p> <p>4 Q. Did you observe a mass arrest on Friday night?</p> <p>5 A. I did.</p> <p>6 Q. About what time did that occur?</p> <p>7 A. I would say 10:02.</p> <p>8 Q. Do you have -- what was your perception of what 9 triggered that mass arrest starting?</p> <p>10 A. I believe that officers were using the curfew as grounds 11 to make a mass arrest. I personally did not see anything 12 that night that warranted a mass arrest or arrest of anyone, 13 any individual. I believe their attempt was to quell future 14 protests.</p> <p>15 MR. HSU: Objection, speculation.</p> <p>16 THE COURT: Overruled.</p> <p>17 THE WITNESS: So I can answer?</p> <p>18 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:</p> <p>19 Q. You can go ahead.</p> <p>20 A. So I do believe that their plan was to make a mass 21 arrest and to scare people from coming back. I don't 22 believe there were grounds to make a mass arrest or make any 23 arrests in general. I thought that was their tactic.</p> <p>24 I also believe that the previous night there were 25 a lot of -- there was a drone flying frequently, as well as</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">110</p> <p>1 A. Yes.</p> <p>2 Q. In your opinion, was the crowd violent?</p> <p>3 A. No.</p> <p>4 Q. Was it riotous?</p> <p>5 A. Was not.</p> <p>6 Q. How did it compare to the sort of atmosphere of the 7 crowd on the prior evening, that Thursday?</p> <p>8 A. It was very similar. I would say it was even more 9 peaceful than the night before. It was very interesting. 10 The night before word got out, I believe it was through 11 Signal, which is an encrypted app that people use on their 12 phone to talk to each other, and the word got out that there 13 was a kettle being set up around the protest by state 14 troopers. A kettle is when they surround the protest in a 15 circle and do a mass arrest. So this word got out very 16 quickly between journalists, activists, everyone that was 17 out there, and people started to disperse, like we don't 18 want to get arrested. We're -- no reason to be arrested, 19 we're just standing around, but we don't want to mess with 20 this. So this dispersal occurred over probably a 20-minute 21 period. By the time curfew hit, people were pretty much 22 dispersed.</p> <p>23 Q. Did you observe a confrontation between law enforcement 24 and protesters or journalists on Thursday, April 15th?</p> <p>25 A. Not that I recall.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">112</p> <p>1 a helicopter, and I do believe they used it as intel on how 2 protesters dispersed from the area.</p> <p>3 And as soon as 10:02 hit, state troopers came in 4 from the south and the east, sheriff in came from the corner 5 of the fence, and they plugged up those areas instantly. He 6 said, "Plug the hole in the fence. Go over here." They 7 watched exactly how activists left the area by using that as 8 intel.</p> <p>9 Q. So you mentioned that you observed both the state 10 troopers and the sheriff during that rush. What happened in 11 that initial rush?</p> <p>12 A. It was pretty chaotic. No one expected to be rushed 13 like this because nothing happened the previous night. It 14 was very similar. It was just from the east there was a 15 line of probably 20 to 25 state troopers that came running 16 in, as well as from the south, and they met with the sheriff 17 kind of in a jumble. They came in screaming, "Get on the 18 ground, get on the ground, get on the ground," and they 19 started taking people down to the ground and started 20 arresting them.</p> <p>21 Q. Where did you go?</p> <p>22 A. I stayed inside the kettle because I believed it was my 23 duty to document the arrests that were happening at the 24 time. That is generally the job of media, is to document 25 people in power to make sure their power is not being</p>

113

1 abused.
 2 **Q.** Can you turn to Exhibit 4 in your book, Plaintiffs'
 3 Exhibit 4. Just take a minute to page through it. Then
 4 when you are ready, let me know what this is.

5 (Witness reviews exhibit)

6 **A.** Okay.

7 **Q.** What is this, Mr. Tuite?

8 **A.** This is my Instagram post talking about what happened on
 9 April 16th. Again, this is posted on April 17th because I
 10 got back after midnight.

11 MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs offer their Exhibit 4.

12 MR. HSU: State objects. The document is hearsay
 13 and presents hearsay testimony.

14 THE COURT: Is it offered for the truth of the
 15 matter asserted?

16 MS. McGARRAUGH: No, it's not. We're going to
 17 just talk about the photographs.

18 THE COURT: What's the purpose of the exhibit?

19 MS. McGARRAUGH: The purpose of the exhibit is to
 20 refresh his recollection of what he saw and also to look at
 21 the photographs that are included. From our perspective, we
 22 can disregard the text.

23 THE COURT: The objection is sustained. You may
 24 use it to refresh recollection, but you don't admit exhibits
 25 to refresh recollection.

114

1 MS. McGARRAUGH: Okay.

2 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:

3 **Q.** All right. So if you can look at page 3 of this
 4 document --

5 THE COURT: Or I should say you don't admit
 6 exhibits to refresh recollection.

7 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:

8 **Q.** What is this page, speaking just about the photograph in
 9 the center on page 3 here?

10 **A.** Did you ask me what it is?

11 **Q.** Yes.

12 **A.** So this is when I'm inside the kettle and the mass
 13 arrests are happening. This is a photo of two protesters
 14 being arrested while holding hands by the sheriff's
 15 department right in front of me. Back behind them there is
 16 a very large line of state troopers.

17 MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs offer just this
 18 page -- and we will redact out the text -- just the
 19 photograph. We can call it Exhibit 4-A, and we will provide
 20 a redacted-out copy following the hearing.

21 THE COURT: This is Exhibit 4, page 3 that you're
 22 offering?

23 MS. McGARRAUGH: Yes, Your Honor. Just the part
 24 that Ms. Anderson has excerpted on the screen, so just the
 25 photograph.

116

1 THE COURT: Would you publish it just so that I am
 2 sure that we are on the same page as to what is being
 3 offered, and then I'll hear from opposing counsel if there's
 4 anything to be heard.

5 MS. McGARRAUGH: Just that call-out. Just the
 6 photograph.

7 THE COURT: Is there any objection?

8 MR. HSU: No objection, Your Honor.

9 THE COURT: It is received in the manner in which
 10 you have offered it.

11 MS. McGARRAUGH: Yes. And we will submit a copy
 12 of just this excerpt --

13 THE COURT: Please do.

14 MS. McGARRAUGH: -- following the hearing.

15 THE COURT: Thank you.

16 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:

17 **Q.** All right. And then turning to the following page in
 18 this document, which we can -- we don't have to publish
 19 this. We're going to do the same exercise again with this
 20 next picture. What is the photograph on the following page,
 21 page 4 of that Exhibit 4?

22 **A.** This is a state trooper making an arrest on the lawn
 23 inside of the kettle. Back behind them is a flashlight
 24 being shown on me from a state trooper.

25 **Q.** Did that state trooper say anything to you as --

1 **A.** Yes, he did.

2 **Q.** What did he say to you?

3 **A.** He said, "Media" -- do I have permission to cuss, to say
 4 in quotes for this?

5 THE COURT: You may state what you heard.

6 THE WITNESS: "Media, get the fuck out of here
 7 now."

8 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:

9 **Q.** Did you understand from that interaction that this state
 10 trooper recognized you as a member of the media?

11 **A.** Yes, I did. Not only did he say, "Media, get the fuck
 12 out of here now," I held up my pass and he acknowledged that
 13 I was media.

14 MS. McGARRAUGH: Okay. So plaintiffs offer just
 15 the photograph, this one as Exhibit 4-B --

16 THE COURT: Okay.

17 MS. McGARRAUGH: -- in the same manner.

18 THE COURT: I just want to make sure that I
 19 understand what exhibit we are talking about. It's the
 20 exhibit that's on the screen, correct?

21 MS. McGARRAUGH: Yes, just this call-out that
 22 pictures a state trooper standing over someone and then a
 23 light flashing in the photographer's lens right here.

24 THE COURT: Okay. Any objection?

25 MR. HSU: No objection, Your Honor.

<p>1 THE COURT: That exhibit is received. 2 MS. McGARRAUGH: Thank you. 3 BY MS. McGARRAUGH: 4 Q. What happened after you took this photograph? 5 A. He charged up to me, along with about four other state 6 troopers. He walked up and said, "Media, get the fuck out 7 of this area now. You have to get the fuck out of here." 8 And I said, "I am allowed to document." He said, "Get the 9 fuck out of here now." And I put my hands up and I said, 10 "Okay, okay, okay."</p> <p>11 I turned to my right as I was walking and I saw 12 someone on the ground, which was being pinned by the foot of 13 a police officer. I took photos for a total of four 14 seconds. I looked at the metadata inside. When you take a 15 photo, it shows you exactly when each photo was taken. Four 16 seconds. That turned out to be Tim Evans, a photographer. 17 I then went to walk again. He told me to walk 18 north, and I was grabbed from behind by a trooper. He 19 grabbed my hood, pulled me backwards and said, "You're under 20 arrest," and pulled me enough to rip the neck of my shirt. 21 Q. What happened after that? 22 A. Another state trooper, who may have been a captain, came 23 and he grabbed my arm and pulled me away from that trooper. 24 He said, "Come this way" and he said, "Go north." He walked 25 me up to the back side of the apartment building. And I was</p>	<p>117</p> <p>1 I can see a member of the media holding their press pass up, 2 which is inside the kettle, as they are being detained 3 inside of the kettle. 4 MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs offer their Exhibit 1. 5 MR. HSU: No objection. 6 THE COURT: Exhibit 1 is received. 7 MS. McGARRAUGH: Permission to publish? 8 THE COURT: Yes, you may. 9 MS. McGARRAUGH: Thank you. 10 BY MS. McGARRAUGH: 11 Q. Zooming in on the center of this picture, in between 12 those two state troopers, what do you see here? 13 A. I see a photographer that has a gas mask on holding up 14 the press credential while he's inside the kettle. 15 Q. Where did the state troopers eventually direct you? 16 A. One trooper came out and said, "You need to leave the 17 area." And we said, "Why do we have to leave the area? We 18 are trying to take photos." He said, "No. You need to 19 leave the area now." We're like, "This is public. We can 20 document in public. We are not obstructing you in any way." 21 He said, "No. You need to leave immediately." He said, "Go 22 two blocks up to the gas station on the corner." 23 Q. From that vantage point, could you see the ongoing 24 arrests in the kettle? 25 A. Could I see what?</p>	<p>119</p> <p>1 I can see a member of the media holding their press pass up, 2 which is inside the kettle, as they are being detained 3 inside of the kettle. 4 MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs offer their Exhibit 1. 5 MR. HSU: No objection. 6 THE COURT: Exhibit 1 is received. 7 MS. McGARRAUGH: Permission to publish? 8 THE COURT: Yes, you may. 9 MS. McGARRAUGH: Thank you. 10 BY MS. McGARRAUGH: 11 Q. Zooming in on the center of this picture, in between 12 those two state troopers, what do you see here? 13 A. I see a photographer that has a gas mask on holding up 14 the press credential while he's inside the kettle. 15 Q. Where did the state troopers eventually direct you? 16 A. One trooper came out and said, "You need to leave the 17 area." And we said, "Why do we have to leave the area? We 18 are trying to take photos." He said, "No. You need to 19 leave the area now." We're like, "This is public. We can 20 document in public. We are not obstructing you in any way." 21 He said, "No. You need to leave immediately." He said, "Go 22 two blocks up to the gas station on the corner." 23 Q. From that vantage point, could you see the ongoing 24 arrests in the kettle? 25 A. Could I see what?</p>
--	---	---

	121		123
1	MS. LANDRUM: Oh, I'm sorry.	1	MS. McGARRAUGH: I would like to publish it.
2	THE COURT: If it is, you may be seated and remain	2	THE COURT: You may.
3	seated while you are speaking, just so that we have access	3	MS. McGARRAUGH: Thank you.
4	to the microphone and it's comfortable for you to express	4	BY MS. McGARRAUGH:
5	yourself.	5	Q. While we're looking at this, I want to talk just briefly
6	MS. LANDRUM: Absolutely. I apologize, Your	6	about the press pass that you were wearing. Is this the
7	Honor.	7	press pass that you were wearing the entire time that you
8	Just as it was becoming published, I just wanted	8	were in Brooklyn Center?
9	to note for the record that driver's license data is	9	A. Yes, it is.
10	protected under the Data Practices Act. I understand that	10	Q. Okay. And how are you wearing it?
11	this is this witness's photograph and that later a driver's	11	A. Around my neck. There's a lanyard that pulls all the
12	license is going to be displayed with his permission. I	12	way around my neck and then it sits in front of my chest.
13	just wanted to note that for the record.	13	Q. You were carrying two photographs, I believe you
14	THE COURT: Okay. The record is so noted.	14	testified?
15	BY MS. McGARRAUGH:	15	A. I was carrying what?
16	Q. On this Exhibit 5, whose photograph is on this page?	16	Q. Excuse me. Not two photographs. Two cameras?
17	A. That is a picture of me that was taken from the state	17	A. Correct.
18	trooper.	18	Q. What other gear did you have?
19	Q. Okay. And then below that, do you see a map?	19	A. I had a helmet, a full-face gas mask. I had a
20	A. Yes, I do.	20	bulletproof vest with plates inside of it. I had a cup. I
21	Q. Is that map approximately where your face was	21	had shin guards.
22	photographed by state troopers?	22	Q. Why do you wear protective equipment?
23	A. Yeah, it looks accurate to me.	23	A. This documentation can be very dangerous in a lot of
24	Q. And do you see in the corner that there is a text that	24	ways. Many times I find myself dodging rubber bullets,
25	says, "STATEDEF0000148"?	25	ducking. I had a flash-bang go off directly on my head
	122		124
1	A. Yes, I do.	1	before, exploded on top of my helmet. Thankfully I had the
2	MS. McGARRAUGH: Plaintiffs offer their Exhibit 5.	2	helmet. I also usually use earplugs because the flash-bangs
3	MR. HSU: No objection.	3	are very loud and they are generally thrown
4	THE COURT: The exhibit is received.	4	indiscriminately. Flash-bangs, they just kind of chuck them
5	BY MS. McGARRAUGH:	5	up over a fence. They want to make sure people are
6	Q. Is it your understanding that this is the photograph	6	uncomfortable and they want them to leave. Those
7	that was taken of you by the state troopers?	7	flash-bangs are very rattling. You can feel it in your
8	A. Yes, it is.	8	bones. It's essentially like an explosion. It is not
9	Q. Looking at Exhibit 6, what's photographed at the top of	9	comfortable at all.
10	this page?	10	I know photographers that have been hit and
11	A. That's my independent press pass, and then below it is	11	wounded severely by rubber bullets. I have met people who
12	my driver's license.	12	have lost their eyes by being shot by a rubber bullet.
13	Q. Okay. You see that any identifying information on the	13	Soren Stevenson, if you recall, last year here in Minnesota
14	driver's license has been redacted out?	14	lost his eye from a rubber bullet.
15	A. Yes, I do.	15	Q. All right. On the evening of April 16 through -- or 11
16	Q. And the map right below that, does this again depict	16	through 16, 2021, that's a Sunday through Friday, did you
17	approximately where these photographs were taken, to your	17	observe anyone claiming to be a journalist who was not?
18	knowledge?	18	A. I did not.
19	A. To my knowledge, yes, it does.	19	Q. What is your experience covering protests?
20	MS. McGARRAUGH: Defendants offer -- excuse me.	20	A. It is a wide range of experience. I was fortunate to be
21	Plaintiffs offer their Exhibit 6.	21	able to travel the country this last year to document this.
22	THE COURT: Exhibit 6, is that what --	22	I spent time in Portland; in Seattle; in Louisville,
23	MS. McGARRAUGH: Yes, Your Honor.	23	Kentucky; here; New York City; Washington, D.C.; Richmond,
24	MR. HSU: No objection.	24	Virginia; Philadelphia.
25	THE COURT: Exhibit 6 is received.	25	Q. Have you observed other law enforcement agencies

<p>1 handling protests?</p> <p>2 A. Many.</p> <p>3 Q. Which ones, if you can recall?</p> <p>4 A. LMPD, which is Louisville, Kentucky, Police Department.</p> <p>5 I observed Capitol Police handling Stop the Steal rallies.</p> <p>6 I observed D.C. Metro Police. I observed in Portland a wide</p> <p>7 variety. So when I was in Portland was the time they were</p> <p>8 protecting the federal courthouse. So there were federal</p> <p>9 officers there protecting the courthouse. There was BORTAC.</p> <p>10 There was ICE. There was Department of Homeland Security.</p> <p>11 There were a lot of officers there protecting the</p> <p>12 courthouse. I also saw officers in Seattle, so Seattle PD,</p> <p>13 as well as Richmond PD and NYPD.</p> <p>14 Q. How does your experience with Minnesota state troopers'</p> <p>15 treatment of you as a journalist compare to your</p> <p>16 observations of other law enforcement's interactions with</p> <p>17 journalists?</p> <p>18 A. The state troopers, to me directly, were by far the most</p> <p>19 aggressive and intimidating. I --</p> <p>20 Q. What's different about how Minnesota state troopers</p> <p>21 interacted with you?</p> <p>22 A. They tried to intimidate me from being in an area.</p> <p>23 Generally in other areas, if you're not obstructing an</p> <p>24 officer while they are making arrest, if you are a safe</p> <p>25 distance, you're allowed to do your job. If you get too</p>	<p>125</p> <p>1 be a response.</p> <p>2 MS. McGARRAUGH: Sure.</p> <p>3 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:</p> <p>4 Q. Why did you think it was important for journalists to be</p> <p>5 able to cover the Derek Chauvin verdict?</p> <p>6 A. Because I believe that the truth needed to be told. I</p> <p>7 believe that this documentation of this time in our life is</p> <p>8 very important to show what's actually happening. I believe</p> <p>9 that, with the way social media is these days, there is a</p> <p>10 lot of information that is not checked. I believe that</p> <p>11 sources need to have accurate documentation as well as</p> <p>12 photographic evidence of what's actually happening.</p> <p>13 People believe almost anything these days with</p> <p>14 social media. People are going to YouTube for information.</p> <p>15 We're seeing social media play huge parts in understanding</p> <p>16 of basically anything. Opinions are swayed on a YouTube</p> <p>17 video.</p> <p>18 So I do believe that people being out and on the</p> <p>19 ground here and doing real documentation is a service that</p> <p>20 is integral to our democracy.</p> <p>21 MS. McGARRAUGH: I have nothing further.</p> <p>22 THE COURT: Is there cross examination for this</p> <p>23 witness?</p> <p>24 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor.</p> <p>25 THE COURT: Counsel, I think we should take our</p>
<p>126</p> <p>1 close, they say, "Back up, back up, back up." Not once did</p> <p>2 I ever have an officer get in my face and say, "Get the fuck</p> <p>3 out of here," not once, including federal officers, like I</p> <p>4 said, ICE, LNPD, NYPD, not once was I threatened like that</p> <p>5 with arrest.</p> <p>6 Q. If an officer asks you to back up, do you comply with</p> <p>7 that kind of direction?</p> <p>8 A. Absolutely.</p> <p>9 Q. Why did you contact the ACLU?</p> <p>10 A. I was very concerned with what was happening here. I</p> <p>11 was here to cover the Derek Chauvin trial. I knew what</p> <p>12 happened last year. I was scared this was going to happen</p> <p>13 to us with the verdict coming in. I didn't feel safe. I</p> <p>14 didn't feel that we would be allowed to do our jobs. We</p> <p>15 didn't know what was going to happen with the verdict,</p> <p>16 obviously, but if stuff started to hit the fan, we thought</p> <p>17 we were going to be detained because State Patrol, to my</p> <p>18 knowledge, has jurisdiction in the state. So I assumed</p> <p>19 that --</p> <p>20 MR. HSU: Objection, speculation, foundation.</p> <p>21 This witness has no basis to testify as to the</p> <p>22 jurisdictional authority.</p> <p>23 THE COURT: Sustained.</p> <p>24 THE WITNESS: Okay. So I --</p> <p>25 THE COURT: Let's pose a question and there will</p>	<p>128</p> <p>1 lunch break now, and we will begin again at 1:00. Okay? So</p> <p>2 everyone please be ready to resume the hearing at 1:00 p.m.</p> <p>3 (Lunch recess taken at 12:28 p.m.)</p> <p>4 * * * * *</p> <p>5 (1:15 p.m.)</p> <p>6 IN OPEN COURT</p> <p>7 THE COURT: We are ready to resume.</p> <p>8 MR. HSU: Is the podium all right?</p> <p>9 THE COURT: I didn't hear you.</p> <p>10 MR. HSU: Is the podium permissible for the cross?</p> <p>11 THE COURT: Yes, it is. And you may adjust the</p> <p>12 height if you need to.</p> <p>13 MR. HSU: My understanding is the mask can be</p> <p>14 removed as well?</p> <p>15 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>16 CROSS EXAMINATION</p> <p>17 BY MR. HSU:</p> <p>18 Q. Good afternoon, sir. My name is Alexander Hsu. I'm</p> <p>19 here today representing the state defendants in this matter,</p> <p>20 Minnesota Department of Public Safety and the Minnesota</p> <p>21 State Patrol.</p> <p>22 And just to make sure I'm saying it right, it's</p> <p>23 Mr. Tuite?</p> <p>24 A. Correct.</p> <p>25 Q. To begin, I would like to talk with you about your</p>

<p>1 experience on April 13, 2021 that you described previously. 2 You stated that the State Patrol was issuing dispersal 3 orders to the crowd; is that correct? 4 A. Correct. 5 Q. About -- you heard about 50 times that order was issued? 6 A. 50 times specifically talking about media need to leave 7 the area, yes. 8 Q. A general order was also being issued to the crowd? 9 A. My recollection, yes, but generally it was targeted, 10 saying, "Media leave the area." That's what I recall, 11 "Media leave the area" about 50 times. 12 Q. And that was issued over the course -- those 50 times 13 was issued over the course of approximately an hour? 14 A. Yes, sir. 15 Q. And dispersal orders across that time were also being 16 issued to the crowd? 17 A. Yes, sir. 18 Q. And you stated that a fire was started in the middle of 19 the street near -- 20 A. Yes. 21 Q. -- the police department? 22 And it was after that fire started that officers 23 began to advance towards the crowd? 24 A. Yes, sir. 25 Q. So the fire was the trigger for the advance?</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">129</p> <p>1 COURT REPORTER: Excuse me. I think you are just 2 talking over him. If you would just wait until he is done 3 with his question, we can hear your answer. 4 THE WITNESS: Sorry. 5 MR. HSU: I can repeat the question. 6 THE COURT: You may. 7 BY MR. HSU: 8 Q. You didn't recognize the individual driving the car 9 prior to that evening? 10 A. No, I did not. 11 Q. And that vehicle wasn't marked as press or media, was 12 it? 13 A. No. 14 Q. And when you got in the vehicle, you were riding in the 15 back seat; is that correct? 16 A. Yes, sir. 17 Q. Was Mr. McFadden in the back seat as well? 18 A. Yes, sir. 19 Q. And officers then detained that vehicle and asked you to 20 leave the vehicle? 21 A. They pulled the driver out of the car. I never saw them 22 again. 23 Q. Officers detained you and pulled you out of the car as 24 well? 25 A. Yes, sir.</p>
<p>1 A. It appeared to be that way, yes. 2 Q. And you testified previously that you witnessed officers 3 arresting and detaining individuals throughout the crowd as 4 they advanced? 5 A. Yes. 6 Q. And they did so after they had issued the previous 7 dispersal orders over the preceding hour? 8 A. Yes, sir. 9 Q. But the crowd did not disperse in response? 10 A. [Inaudible.] 11 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear the answer. 12 THE WITNESS: I said, "No." Sorry. 13 BY MR. HSU: 14 Q. Is it correct that you attempted to leave the area in 15 response to the dispersal orders? 16 A. I attempted to leave the area in a car, yes, sir. 17 Q. And that car was driven by, you described, a Good 18 Samaritan? 19 A. Yes. 20 Q. Did you know who that person was -- 21 A. [Inaudible.] 22 Q. -- to that night? 23 THE COURT: You have to answer with words. I did 24 not hear your words. 25 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. I did not.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">130</p> <p>1 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear the answer. 2 THE WITNESS: I said, "No." Sorry. 3 BY MR. HSU: 4 Q. Is it correct that you attempted to leave the area in 5 response to the dispersal orders? 6 A. I attempted to leave the area in a car, yes, sir. 7 Q. And that car was driven by, you described, a Good 8 Samaritan? 9 A. Yes. 10 Q. Did you know who that person was -- 11 A. [Inaudible.] 12 Q. -- to that night? 13 THE COURT: You have to answer with words. I did 14 not hear your words. 15 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. I did not.</p>
<p>1 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear the answer. 2 THE WITNESS: I said, "No." Sorry. 3 BY MR. HSU: 4 Q. Is it correct that you attempted to leave the area in 5 response to the dispersal orders? 6 A. I attempted to leave the area in a car, yes, sir. 7 Q. And that car was driven by, you described, a Good 8 Samaritan? 9 A. Yes. 10 Q. Did you know who that person was -- 11 A. [Inaudible.] 12 Q. -- to that night? 13 THE COURT: You have to answer with words. I did 14 not hear your words. 15 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. I did not.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">132</p> <p>1 COURT REPORTER: I didn't hear the answer. 2 THE WITNESS: I said, "No." Sorry. 3 BY MR. HSU: 4 Q. Is it correct that you attempted to leave the area in 5 response to the dispersal orders? 6 A. I attempted to leave the area in a car, yes, sir. 7 Q. And that car was driven by, you described, a Good 8 Samaritan? 9 A. Yes. 10 Q. Did you know who that person was -- 11 A. [Inaudible.] 12 Q. -- to that night? 13 THE COURT: You have to answer with words. I did 14 not hear your words. 15 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry. I did not.</p>

<p style="text-align: center;">133</p> <p>1 kind of filtered through the curfew. So maybe 10:20, 10:30 2 everyone seemed to be just about gone. 3 Q. And you didn't observe any encounters between protesters 4 and law enforcement officers on that evening? 5 A. Not to my recollection, no. Nothing of a serious 6 nature, no. 7 Q. And there were dispersal orders issued that evening as 8 well; is that correct? 9 A. From my recollection, there were. 10 Q. And the crowd dispersed in response to them? 11 A. The crowd dispersed, yes. 12 Q. I would like to now talk about the events of April 16, 13 2021. On that evening you were located near the Brooklyn 14 Center Police Department, correct? 15 A. Yes, sir. 16 Q. And you testified that fireworks were being shot off in 17 the area? 18 A. Yes, sir. 19 Q. Multiple fireworks? 20 A. Yes. Up in the air, yes, sir. 21 Q. And the dispersal order was issued at that time as well; 22 is that correct? 23 A. Not that I recall, sir. 24 Q. You don't recall any dispersal order? 25 A. I don't recall a dispersal order.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">135</p> <p>1 MS. McGARRAUGH: He has the plaintiffs' book. 2 MR. HSU: Permission to approach, Your Honor? 3 THE COURT: You may. 4 BY MR. HSU: 5 Q. I'm showing you what's been marked as Defense 6 Exhibit 25. Mr. Tuite, you have that document in front of 7 you and it's entitled Second Declaration of Chris Tuite; is 8 that correct? 9 A. Yes, sir. 10 Q. And that's your name, correct? 11 A. Chris Tuite, yes. 12 Q. Do you recall signing a declaration similar to this 13 document? 14 A. Yes. 15 Q. I'll give you a chance to review it. Would you -- is 16 this a true and accurate copy of the declaration that you 17 submitted? 18 (Witness reviews exhibit) 19 A. Yes, sir. 20 Q. And this was a sworn declaration; is that correct? 21 A. Yes, sir. 22 Q. On the last page, that's your signature? 23 A. Yes, sir. 24 Q. Dated May 30, 2021? 25 A. Yes, sir.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">134</p> <p>1 Q. Is it possible that you didn't hear any dispersal order 2 that was issued? 3 A. I was standing near the fence and I'm pretty perceptive. 4 I'm pretty sure I would have heard the order. 5 Q. So is it your testimony today that no dispersal order 6 was issued on April 16th? 7 A. I do not recollect a dispersal order being issued. 8 MR. HSU: Your Honor, we would ask to publish to 9 the Court and to the witness what's been previously marked 10 as Defense Exhibit 25. 11 THE COURT: Is there any objection? 12 MS. McGARRAUGH: No. 13 THE COURT: Okay. You may. 14 MR. HSU: Excuse me, Your Honor. One moment. May 15 I retrieve a paper from counsel table? 16 THE COURT: Yes, you may. 17 (Pause) 18 BY MR. HSU: 19 Q. Mr. Tuite, do you have Exhibit Number 25 in front of you 20 right now? 21 A. Yes, sir. It's a few pages. 22 Q. And this document is titled the Second Declaration of 23 Chris Tuite; is that correct? 24 A. I don't see that in Number 25, no. I see a letter from 25 Paul Schnell.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">136</p> <p>1 Q. And you were telling the truth when you signed this 2 declaration; is that correct? 3 A. Yes, sir. 4 Q. And you just testified that no dispersal order was 5 issued on the evening of April 16th; is that correct? 6 A. Not that I recall. 7 Q. Mr. Tuite, I would ask you to please read silently along 8 as I read aloud on page 4, paragraph 9, of the declaration. 9 A. Whoa. I don't have a page 4. I have page 1, 3, and 5. 10 Q. Mr. Tuite, are they double-spaced on the back side? 11 A. Oh. There we go. 12 Q. And I will direct you again to page 4, paragraph 9. 13 A. Yes, sir. 14 Q. "My recollection is that on April 16, no dispersal order 15 was issued" -- 16 THE COURT: Are you asking him to refresh his 17 recollection? 18 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. 19 THE COURT: Okay. So he can look at it. You 20 don't need to read it for him. And then you can pose your 21 question. 22 BY MR. HSU: 23 Q. Mr. Tuite, I would ask you to please read through that 24 paragraph. Let me know when you have read it. 25 (Witness reviews exhibit)</p>

137

1 **A.** Okay.
 2 **Q.** Does that refresh your recollection of the events of
 3 April 16, 2021?
 4 **A.** Well, it was essentially simultaneous saying, "Get on
 5 the ground." That was what I am trying to say here. When
 6 they said, "Get on the ground," they didn't say, "You have
 7 ten minutes to disperse," if that makes sense. Like by
 8 10:02 there was a swarm.
 9 **Q.** And officers were directing the crowd to --
 10 **A.** Get on the ground.
 11 **Q.** You testified that officers were conducting a mass
 12 arrest --
 13 **A.** Yes, sir.
 14 **Q.** -- on April 16th?
 15 And officers were attempting to encircle the
 16 crowd; is that correct?
 17 **A.** Yes.
 18 **Q.** And you recognized that they were conducting a mass
 19 arrest at that time --
 20 **A.** Yes, sir.
 21 **Q.** -- when they started the encirclement?
 22 **A.** Yes, sir.
 23 **Q.** And you chose intentionally to remain within the
 24 encirclement; is that --
 25 **A.** Yes. I stayed there to document the arrests, yes, sir.

138

1 **Q.** Officers directed you specifically to leave the area; is
 2 that correct?
 3 **A.** Yes, sir.
 4 **Q.** And you continued to stay within the mass arrest area?
 5 **A.** Yes, sir. I stood on the sidewalk and in the grass in
 6 an area that was not obstructing to them.
 7 **Q.** That remained within the encirclement area; is that
 8 correct?
 9 **A.** Yes, sir.
 10 **Q.** And officers repeatedly directed you to leave the area;
 11 is that correct?
 12 **A.** Yes, sir.
 13 **Q.** Is it your standard practice to disobey police orders?
 14 **A.** No, sir.
 15 **Q.** Yet when police ordered you to leave the area, you
 16 refused; is that correct?
 17 **A.** I stood to take photos.
 18 **Q.** Within a mass arrest zone?
 19 **A.** Yes, sir.
 20 **Q.** Despite the fact that officers were directing you to
 21 leave that area?
 22 **A.** Yes, sir.
 23 **Q.** And you testified that you were -- one officer grabbed
 24 you by your coat; is that correct?
 25 **A.** Yes, sir.

140

1 And you testified that as you were moving that
 2 way, that one trooper held what appeared to you as a
 3 chemical dispersal -- dispersant?
 4 **A.** Yes, sir.
 5 **Q.** But he didn't fire that at you, did you?
 6 **A.** No.
 7 **Q.** He didn't use it on you?
 8 **A.** He did not.
 9 **Q.** Did you have any further physical interaction with
 10 troopers prior to arriving at the gas station?
 11 **A.** Between that time?
 12 **Q.** Yes.
 13 **A.** I do believe there was a small shove in the back when I
 14 wasn't walking fast enough, but nothing other than that.
 15 **Q.** And was that -- it was at the gas station that you were
 16 photographed?
 17 **A.** Yes, sir.
 18 **Q.** And those are the exhibits that you testified to?
 19 **A.** Yes, sir.
 20 **Q.** After those photographs were taken, you were allowed to
 21 leave; is that correct?
 22 **A.** We were told to go across the street from the gas
 23 station, and all the media was kind of lined up right there.
 24 This is murky because the roads are all blocked. So being
 25 able to leave means going through a zone of an active

141

1 protest with police. So I would say, no, I was not able to
 2 leave at that time.
 3 **Q.** Were you arrested?
 4 **A.** No, sir.
 5 **Q.** Were you detained?
 6 **A.** No, sir.

7 MR. HSU: No further questions.

8 THE COURT: Anything further for this witness?

9 MS. McGARRAUGH: Just very briefly.

10 THE COURT: You may.

11 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

12 BY MS. McGARRAUGH:

13 **Q.** You just testified about a state trooper holding pepper
 14 spray up to you?

15 **A.** Yes, sir.

16 **Q.** Did you understand that to be a threat?

17 **A.** I did.

18 **Q.** All right. And then --

19 **A.** He screamed at me, "You had your free pass. Are you
 20 fucking stupid?"

21 **Q.** During the time that you were being photographed by the
 22 gas station -- about how long did that take?

23 **A.** I would say the line took about ten minutes to get to
 24 the front.

25 **Q.** Were you allowed to document the proceedings during that

142

1 time?
 2 **A.** No. I tried. There was an arrest happening to the
 3 right, and I walked over there. I got about ten seconds and
 4 the state trooper walked up and said, "Get back in line.
 5 That's enough."

6 MS. McGARRAUGH: We have nothing further.

7 THE COURT: Anything further for this witness?

8 MR. HSU: No, Your Honor.

9 THE COURT: Okay. You may be excused.

10 THE WITNESS: Thank you, Your Honor.

11 (Pause)

12 MR. RIACH: Excuse me, Your Honor. Can I ask a
 13 question of the Court?

14 THE COURT: You may.

15 MR. RIACH: Mr. Tuite is finished testifying. May
 16 he remain in the courtroom?

17 THE COURT: Yes. Has he been excused as a
 18 witness?

19 MS. McGARRAUGH: Yes.

20 THE COURT: Okay. He may remain, yes.

21 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

22 And then one more kind of housekeeping point, Your
 23 Honor. I think before we begin with the State's witnesses,
 24 it might be a good idea to just make sure we understand who
 25 will need to be excused when confidential or attorneys' eyes

144

1 part of the Attorney General's Office. And we also have
 2 Bruce Gordon with us, who is the director for Department of
 3 Safety with regard to communications. These are all
 4 high-level officials for the Department of Safety. Because
 5 the Department of Safety is sued in its official capacity,
 6 we would like for them to be able to stay for that purpose.
 7 And the other two individuals in the back I don't actually
 8 recognize on state defendants' side.

9 With regard to parties, Your Honor, the defendants
 10 would take the position that Mr. Tuite is not a party and
 11 that's because he is not a named plaintiff in this case. It
 12 is a putative class action, but the class action hasn't been
 13 certified. So to the extent that those documents are being
 14 referenced, those types of -- even though he was a witness
 15 today, I believe he would have to leave the courtroom.

16 THE COURT: So your view is Mr. Tuite does need to
 17 leave the courtroom?

18 MS. LANDRUM: That's correct, Your Honor.

19 THE COURT: Okay. And then you said there are
 20 other individuals in the rear who are members of your
 21 organization; is that correct?

22 MS. ROBERTSON: I'm sorry, Your Honor. I am
 23 Heather Robertson. I'm the attorney for the City of
 24 Minneapolis, here with my co-counsel, Sharda Enslin and
 25 Kristin Sarff. And Mr. Joe Kelly, who is the attorney for

<p style="text-align: right;">145</p> <p>1 Defendant Robert Kroll, is also present here. 2 THE COURT: Okay. Thank you. Is there any 3 objection to these individuals remaining in the courtroom? 4 MS. LANDRUM: Because they are counsel, no, Your 5 Honor. They would have received these documents under the 6 protective order. 7 THE COURT: Okay. Anything further to address as 8 to who is present in the courtroom at this time? 9 MR. RIACH: I think that covers everybody, Your 10 Honor, and we are in agreement with the State -- 11 THE COURT: Very well. 12 MR. RIACH: -- on how to proceed. We are fine -- 13 THE COURT: We are ready to proceed. I'm sorry. 14 I spoke over everyone else. So please finish what you said 15 and make sure that we have a clear record. 16 MR. RIACH: Nothing else to say, Your Honor. 17 THE COURT: Okay. Are we ready to proceed, then? 18 Okay. You may. 19 MR. HSU: Your Honor, the State would call 20 Commissioner John Harrington as a witness. 21 THE COURT: Please. 22 COURT REPORTER: Would you raise your right hand, 23 please. 24 (Witness sworn) 25 COURT REPORTER: You can have a seat in the</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">147</p> <p>1 THE COURT: Are we ready to proceed? 2 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. 3 THE COURT: You may. 4 (John Harrington) 5 DIRECT EXAMINATION 6 BY MR. HSU: 7 Q. Commissioner Harrington, good afternoon. 8 A. Good afternoon. 9 Q. Could you please tell the Court where you are currently 10 employed. 11 A. I'm currently employed as the commissioner of the 12 Minnesota Department of Public Safety. 13 Q. And how long have you been serving as a commissioner? 14 A. I've been serving as commissioner since January of 2019. 15 Q. Can you briefly describe your job duties as the 16 commissioner of Public Safety. 17 A. The commissioner of the Department of Public Safety is a 18 cabinet-level official reporting to the governor. I oversee 19 the Department of Public Safety, which is comprised of 20 14 divisions that oversee public safety in both the law 21 enforcement sense and the fire and emergency management 22 sense. Also oversees victim services and driver's license 23 and vehicle services. 24 Q. Prior to that role, were you employed in the law 25 enforcement field?</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">146</p> <p>1 witness stand. If you would state your name, spelling your 2 first and last name, please. 3 THE WITNESS: My name is John Mark Harrington. 4 Last name is spelled H-a-r-r-i-n-g-t-o-n. 5 THE COURT: And, Commissioner Harrington, as you 6 are comfortable, you may remove your mask if you would like 7 to, but I will -- 8 THE WITNESS: Thank you very much, Your Honor. 9 THE COURT: -- leave you to do as you would like. 10 And you may proceed. 11 MR. HSU: Your Honor, we're just going to put -- 12 we have a physical copy of the exhibits for ease. I'm just 13 going to put it in front of the witness and -- 14 THE COURT: You may. 15 MR. HSU: -- request permission as we move. 16 THE COURT: And I don't know what the other 17 exhibit -- does the other exhibit book need to be there at 18 this time? 19 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I can -- with permission 20 to approach, I can come get our exhibit book. 21 THE COURT: I think just because of the size, if 22 we can remove one and make sure that Commissioner Harrington 23 has enough space to be able to look at the documents, that 24 would be great. 25 (Pause)</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">148</p> <p>1 A. Yes, I was. 2 Q. Can you briefly describe that prior experience. 3 A. Absolutely. I started policing in 1977 with the City of 4 St. Paul as a police officer. I rose through the ranks over 5 the course of the next 30 years or so to the rank of senior 6 commander, and then promoted from there by Mayor Randy Kelly 7 as the chief of police in 2004. I served as chief of police 8 for the City of St. Paul from 2004 to 2010. At the end of 9 my term, I was elected to the Minnesota State Senate for the 10 biennium year, so 2010 to 2012, and then returned to law 11 enforcement as the chief of police for the Metropolitan 12 Transit Police, where I served from 2012 until twenty -- 13 until I left to take this assignment with Governor Walz. 14 Q. In total, how many years of law experience would you 15 estimate you have? 16 A. 44 years, I would say. That's a pretty good ballpark. 17 Q. And you've already touched on some of it, but I would 18 like to get a little more background on the Department of 19 Public Safety. Could you describe its role and what the 20 Department serves in terms of state functions. 21 A. Certainly. The Department of Public Safety is the 22 agency that both serves and protects Minnesotans on a 23 statewide basis. We do that through administration of 24 programs, such as officer justice programs, where we serve 25 victims; officer traffic safety, where we work to increase</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">149</p> <p>1 traffic safety. But we also serve it in education in terms 2 of educating the public in terms of victims rights, 3 services.</p> <p>4 And then what is probably most notable in this 5 context is we serve as the enforcement arm of the state, at 6 least in some part, because we oversee the Minnesota State 7 Patrol, the Minnesota Bureau of Criminal Apprehension, and 8 the Alcohol and Gambling Enforcement. That's not all of the 9 officers or peace officers that work for the State, DNR has 10 a separate section and they are run by that agency, but the 11 majority of peace officers in the state of Minnesota work 12 under the Department of Public Safety.</p> <p>13 Q. Does the Department of Public Safety have an Internal 14 Affairs Division?</p> <p>15 A. Yes, it does.</p> <p>16 Q. Is that a separate division from the Minnesota State 17 Patrol?</p> <p>18 A. Yes, it is.</p> <p>19 Q. Why is that?</p> <p>20 A. We believe that an independent review of cases brought 21 where there was an allegation of misconduct ensures an 22 independent and a thorough investigation. We also believe 23 that it increases the transparency for the public when they 24 have a complaint about any member of the Department of 25 Public Safety staff.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">151</p> <p>1 Q. Why not?</p> <p>2 A. The state of Minnesota is made up of 87 counties and 3 then countless individual local jurisdictions, each of which 4 has local policing authority over what happens in their 5 jurisdiction, whether it's in their town or their city or 6 within their county.</p> <p>7 The Minnesota State Patrol's jurisdiction is 8 statewide in the sense that it is on any of the trunk 9 highways that cross the state from north to south or east to 10 west, but we have no local jurisdiction to investigate 11 crimes outside of our primary purview.</p> <p>12 Q. Does the State Patrol have any authority over city or 13 county law enforcement entities?</p> <p>14 A. No, it does not.</p> <p>15 Q. And you mentioned that the State Patrol and Department 16 of Public Safety can assist local entities. What role does 17 the State Patrol play in that regard?</p> <p>18 A. The State Patrol's role when we're called to assist, we 19 try to meet the local jurisdiction's needs where they are. 20 So in some cases we're there because they need traffic 21 control. For example, in the case of an emergency or a 22 flood, we might be there to do traffic control and traffic 23 direction. In other cases we would be there because they 24 need accident reconstruction or they need an accident 25 investigation and we have a high level of expertise in crash</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">150</p> <p>1 Q. What is the mission of the Department?</p> <p>2 A. We are there to serve and protect Minnesotans. The 3 Department has a very broad mission, as I mentioned, with a 4 wide range of organizations. So protecting them from fires 5 with the state fire marshal, protecting them from traffic 6 collisions with officer traffic safety and the Department -- 7 State Patrol, investigating crimes with the Bureau of 8 Criminal Apprehension, and then also working to -- working 9 in partnership with local jurisdictions to assist them when 10 they have needs, whether it is in criminal investigation, in 11 traffic crash reconstruction, or facilitating their 12 administration of justice.</p> <p>13 Q. And you mentioned Minnesota State Patrol and its role 14 there. Are there any jurisdictional limits on the authority 15 of the State Patrol?</p> <p>16 A. Minnesota State Patrol's primary jurisdiction is the 17 state trunk highways. That is really what their primary 18 role is. They also have assignments to protect the State 19 Capitol and they also provide the executive protection for 20 the governor.</p> <p>21 Q. What is the source of those jurisdictional limits?</p> <p>22 A. The Minnesota State Patrol's jurisdictional limits are 23 set in statute.</p> <p>24 Q. Is the Minnesota State Patrol a statewide police force?</p> <p>25 A. No, it is not.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">152</p> <p>1 investigations, as you would expect.</p> <p>2 We, because of the State Capitol, have also been 3 trained in crowd control and so we have been called upon by 4 other jurisdictions to assist them in crowd control when 5 they have felt the need.</p> <p>6 But we typically try and meet the needs that the 7 local agency is asking us to fulfill if we have both the 8 resources and/or the expertise or the competence to do that.</p> <p>9 Q. Does the State Patrol require a request from a local 10 entity before it provides those resources?</p> <p>11 A. Yes, it does.</p> <p>12 Q. What is the typical process for that type of request?</p> <p>13 A. Typically you would see either -- the local 14 jurisdiction's on-duty officer, for example, chief of police 15 or a police captain, would request the State Patrol to come 16 in to do an accident reconstruction in some cases.</p> <p>17 In the case of an emergency, typically it is a 18 chief-to-chief correspondence where the chief of a local 19 jurisdiction would request Colonel Matt Langer, who is the 20 colonel and chief of the State Patrol, to assist or we may 21 get a request through the duty officer, which is a 24/7 22 operation out of the BCA where any emergency requests for 23 state aid are received and then can be transferred to the 24 proper jurisdiction.</p> <p>25 Q. Commissioner, what is the Mobile Response Team?</p>

153

1 **A.** The MRT or Mobile Response Team is a team of state
 2 troopers who have been trained to do crowd control and to
 3 respond as an emergency services response team. Primarily
 4 they were trained to respond to crises at the State Capitol,
 5 but over the course of the last few years we have been
 6 called upon to expand where they respond to in the cases of
 7 an emergency.

8 **Q.** You mentioned crowd control. Are there any other types
 9 of events that they would respond to in terms of
 10 emergencies?

11 **A.** They have responded to parades, civil unrest, and they
 12 also have worked simply large-scale special events. For
 13 example, they were involved I believe at the Republican
 14 National Convention.

15 **Q.** Is the Mobile Response Team involved in any disaster
 16 relief responses?

17 **A.** The Mobile Response Team has capabilities to do that
 18 also. It depends on where the disaster would occur and what
 19 the logistics are for responding, having troopers respond.
 20 So if it was in greater Minnesota in the far north, it might
 21 be more logically feasible to send local troopers there
 22 than it would be to send MRT from the Twin Cities, but in
 23 some cases where the disaster is sustained and where there's
 24 going to be a long-term need for troopers there that work in
 25 a very close-knit team environment, you would see them sent

154

1 there also.

2 **Q.** When the State Patrol assists local law enforcement, who
 3 is in charge regarding the setting of law enforcement goals?

4 **A.** The local agency sets the overall mission that we're
 5 attempting to respond to. However, within the context of
 6 that overall mission, the Minnesota State Patrol retains its
 7 own jurisdiction and its own responsibility for the
 8 direction of its actual officers. So while we may be called
 9 to a city to assist, the captain or the lieutenant of the
 10 State Patrol would be the person who is actually directing
 11 the activities of the State Patrol.

12 **Q.** Does the State Patrol assume any control over the local
 13 agency when it's assisting?

14 **A.** No, it does not.

15 **Q.** Commissioner, does the Department of Public Safety set
 16 forth any standards of conduct for officers acting under its
 17 umbrella?

18 **A.** Yes, we do.

19 MR. HSU: Your Honor, we would request permission
 20 to publish to the witness and the Court what's been marked
 21 as Exhibit 15 --

22 THE COURT: You may.

23 MR. HSU: -- of the defendants' exhibits. I think
 24 Ms. Kosek is going to pull it up on the screen here. I
 25 would ask, could you please just scroll through it.

Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR
 651-848-1225

EXHIBIT A

155

1 BY MR. HSU:

2 **Q.** And I will ask, Commissioner, if you could just please
 3 review the document briefly.

4 **A.** Certainly. It's scrolling still.

5 (Witness reviews exhibit)

6 **Q.** Commissioner, do you recognize this document?

7 **A.** Yes, I do.

8 **Q.** What is this document?

9 **A.** It's Minnesota Department of Public Safety. It's an
 10 administrative policy published in 1996. It describes --
 11 it's from the Office of the Commissioner. It was approved
 12 by the commissioner and it describes -- thank you very much.
 13 I was going to have to get spectacles out. It describes
 14 conduct unbecoming a peace officer.

15 **Q.** And how do you recognize this document?

16 **A.** I reviewed this document when I took over the
 17 organization, and I review it on an annual basis.

18 **Q.** Is this a true and accurate copy of that?

19 **A.** Yes, it so appears.

20 MR. HSU: Your Honor, the state defendants would
 21 move to admit Exhibit 15 into evidence.

22 THE COURT: Any objection?

23 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor.

24 THE COURT: Exhibit 15 is received.

25 BY MR. HSU:

156

1 **Q.** Commissioner, you've touched on it a bit already, but
 2 could you please describe this exhibit for the Court and its
 3 role in terms of the Department and its actions.

4 **A.** The document spells out the purpose for it, first of
 5 all. So the purpose is to define conduct unbecoming, which
 6 helps bracket for an officer what is conduct that should
 7 be -- how we should operate. So while it defines the thou
 8 shall not effectively, it also defines what you should be
 9 doing also.

10 It's a policy specifically geared toward law
 11 enforcement, so it's geared for peace officers, sworn peace
 12 officers within the organization, and it talks about the
 13 fact that we recognize that our effectiveness is dependent
 14 upon community support and community respect and that that's
 15 a two-way street and that we understand that without
 16 community respect and without their confidence, that our
 17 ability to function is at best de minimis.

18 The scope applies to all officers of the
 19 Department, so it applies to -- whether you're a BCA agent,
 20 State Patrol, or in AGE. And it doesn't matter where you
 21 are in the state of Minnesota, it applies to all of them
 22 equally.

23 And then it outlines principles or pillars that
 24 talk about what are the background for that. So Principle
 25 One, for example, talks about all peace officers conducting

<p style="text-align: center;">157</p> <p>1 themselves in accordance with the Constitution of the United 2 States, Minnesota Constitution, and applicable laws. It is 3 effectively the oath of office that every peace officer 4 takes when they are sworn in as a peace officer or when 5 they're promoted.</p> <p>6 Q. Commissioner, how would an officer become aware of this 7 document?</p> <p>8 A. Every peace officer who works with the State of 9 Minnesota would be trained in this document. For example, 10 the Minnesota State Patrol, which offers a state police 11 academy at Camp Ripley, they would be instructed in this 12 document during their academy and then it's also reviewed 13 with them on an annual basis during performance reviews.</p> <p>14 Q. Commissioner, I want to draw you to -- your attention to 15 the language on page 2 under the second principle, item 16 number 4, and that states that an officer shall take no 17 action knowing it will violate the constitutional rights of 18 any person.</p> <p>19 How do you understand that as it applies to peace 20 officers under the Department?</p> <p>21 A. My understanding of rule number 4 is that as we look at 22 the United States Constitution and the Minnesota 23 Constitution, those amendments, the right to free speech, 24 the right to assembly, the right to not be searched without 25 a warrant, the right against self-incrimination, all of those</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">159</p> <p>1 schools, they are all partners that we should be working 2 with.</p> <p>3 The media is given particular attention as we talk 4 about community policing because we recognize that 5 especially in the -- law enforcement has an educational 6 goal. The media becomes really an essential partner with us 7 in trying to make sure that the information we want to get 8 out, whether it's about distracted driving or drunk driving 9 or about a curfew that we want people to abide by, the media 10 plays an essential role in doing that. And they also play 11 an essential role as sort of a watchdog for the community, 12 bringing to our attention crime, in some cases, or 13 misconduct.</p> <p>14 Q. With all of those concerns in mind, what steps does the 15 Department of Public Safety and Minnesota State Patrol take 16 to maintain their relationship with the media?</p> <p>17 A. The Department of Public Safety at the commissioner's 18 level operates an Office of Communications, which has -- it 19 has, frankly, one of the more robust staffs that I've ever 20 worked with in terms of communication.</p> <p>21 So almost all the divisions have a communications 22 person that works with them and their job is to make sure 23 that they have ongoing relations with the media, both in 24 terms of advising the media when we have information or a 25 press release, but also fielding the day-to-day questions</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">158</p> <p>1 rights are to be protected under this rule and that no 2 officer should take any action that knowingly violates these 3 constitutional rights, because if they do, they then are 4 subject to discipline.</p> <p>5 Q. Would the intention of targeting members of the media or 6 the press be a violation of these standards?</p> <p>7 A. Yes, it would.</p> <p>8 Q. I believe you mentioned the importance of partnership. 9 Is it important for the Department and State Patrol to 10 maintain a relationship with members of the media?</p> <p>11 A. Yes, it is.</p> <p>12 Q. Why is that?</p> <p>13 A. I was brought up as a community policing cop, that was 14 how St. Paul trained their cops, and it's the philosophy 15 that I have operated under for the 40 years that I've been 16 in the business.</p> <p>17 The basic philosophy of community policing, which 18 is generally recognized by everyone as the most effective 19 and the most authentic form of policing, essentially says 20 that the public and the police have to work together.</p> <p>21 And then as we think about how we break down who 22 is the public, we -- the media is one of those major 23 components. It's one of those groups that we recognize as 24 being a part of the public, just as we recognize elected 25 officials, community groups, nonprofit organizations,</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">160</p> <p>1 the media has about incidents that happened across the 2 state.</p> <p>3 In addition to that role, we've also done an 4 extensive amount of outreach to the media, especially over 5 the last few years, to try and make sure that we are 6 operating with the media under best practices. And so 7 whether it is at the commissioner's level, at the State 8 Patrol level or the BCA level or any of the other agencies, 9 we oftentimes find ourselves having regular dialogue with 10 the media and bringing them in to make sure they know what's 11 going on within the Department of Public Safety. We believe 12 that transparency is our best vehicle.</p> <p>13 Q. Commissioner, I would like to move to more specifically 14 the unrest that occurred in Minneapolis in May 2020 15 following the death of George Floyd. Was the Department of 16 Public Safety or Minnesota State Patrol involved in those 17 events?</p> <p>18 A. Yes, we were.</p> <p>19 Q. And how did the Minnesota State Patrol become involved?</p> <p>20 A. After George Floyd was murdered and after the video 21 became public, the duty officer made me aware of the crowds 22 that were gathering in protest.</p> <p>23 As we coordinated with Minneapolis, asking 24 Minneapolis and Hennepin County what they needed and we 25 received requests from them, one of the concerns that was</p>

161

1 voiced was that with a very large crowd that was moving in
 2 the direction of the freeway, that we might well have a
 3 freeway protest, which brought great concern to the State
 4 Patrol. We have seen people killed on the freeway. We've
 5 seen people run over on the freeway in those kind of
 6 traffic-blocking events. So we began having the State
 7 Patrol position themselves to assist -- to be in position to
 8 assist if we did have a freeway protest.

9 We received requests from the City of Minneapolis,
 10 through the police department, to also assist them in the
 11 Third Precinct area down off of Lake Street because they
 12 were seeing very large crowds and they were concerned about
 13 their ability to respond to those crowds.

14 **Q.** And were you involved in the State Patrol and the
 15 Department of Public Safety responses in your role as
 16 commissioner?

17 **A.** Yes, I was.

18 **Q.** Can you describe, based on your experiences as the
 19 commissioner and your role there, what was happening on the
 20 ground during those events and what were the concerns faced
 21 by the State Patrol and the Department?

22 **A.** There were several concerns, some expressed initially by
 23 the City of Minneapolis and Hennepin County, others that we
 24 saw once we actually got on the ground.

25 And then part of my role is I'm the homeland

162

1 security advisor for the governor and so one of my jobs is
 2 also to make sure the governor is aware of major critical
 3 events within the state of Minnesota that might affect or
 4 involve state assets or require state resources to respond.

5 As we progressed through the first and second day,
 6 the crowds were gathering. We noted with some distress that
 7 there were, in fact, multiple crowds and there was not just
 8 one protest. There were, in fact, several protests spread
 9 out over a larger geographic area, which made the city's
 10 response more complicated and it was far more taxing to try
 11 and have enough peace officers to respond to any one of
 12 those crowds, some of which estimated in the eight to ten
 13 thousand range at one point or another.

14 There was also calls from MPD that talked about
 15 the need for this to become a sustained element, that they
 16 didn't expect that this was going to end appropriately --
 17 not appropriately. In a timely fashion.

18 Many special events we respond to have a set
 19 beginning and a set end time and so you can plan for this is
 20 a four-hour protest or this is an all-day protest. But in
 21 this case, because the protests seem to be more organically
 22 or spontaneously driven, it didn't have any boxes around it
 23 in terms of where the protest was going to be. It didn't
 24 have any boxes around it in terms of how long the protest
 25 was going to last.

163

1 And it also didn't have -- what we oftentimes work
 2 with when we're dealing with protests or events, it didn't
 3 have any clear defined leaders who you could work with to
 4 help with the organization of the protest, to be able to
 5 work out what do they want to do, where do they want to go,
 6 how can we facilitate their movement along streets and
 7 highways.

8 So those all complicated the response to the
 9 protests as a matter of planning.

10 And then as the protests continued, we saw two new
 11 elements that we had not seen really in my police career.
 12 We saw the use of arson and we saw organized looting go on
 13 with the protests.

14 And so while the protests would be going on in one
 15 place, we would have a car parts place or liquor store,
 16 oftentimes those seemed to be the two places that got hit
 17 first, they would be set on fire.

18 Once those were on fire, you would see stores
 19 nearby looted, which further depleted city and county
 20 resources to respond as they were trying to figure out how
 21 to get the fire department to the fires and then how to
 22 respond to the looting incidents.

23 The fire department, in fact, ended up calling to
 24 say they needed, in fact, protection because they couldn't
 25 get out of their fire --

164

1 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I am going to --
 2 (Simultaneous indiscernible crosstalk)

3 THE WITNESS: -- because they were being -- had
 4 rocks thrown at them.

5 THE COURT: Is there an objection?

6 MR. RIACH: Withdrawn, Your Honor. Withdrawn.

7 BY MR. HSU:

8 **Q.** Commissioner, I believe you touched on this in your
 9 answer, but in your 44 years of experience, have you ever
 10 dealt with the level of unrest that was faced in May 2020?

11 **A.** No, I have not.

12 **Q.** And you touched on a few of the points. What made it
 13 stand out in your experience?

14 **A.** The size of the groups were far larger, the geographic
 15 spread, and what seemed to almost be a coordinated effort,
 16 that if you went to one area to meet a group, that group
 17 sometimes would leave, but it would pop up in another area.
 18 And so the level of coordination. The use of fire and arson
 19 as a tactic was also a new element.

20 And then the looting that seemed to go on and went
 21 on in places that did not seem to have any local connection
 22 to the precipitating event. For example, we responded to
 23 looting in West St. Paul on Robert Street and we responded
 24 to looting in Anoka County and we responded to looting in --
 25 the Lakeville City Hall was fire-bombed, none of which

165

1 seemed to have any direct connection to George Floyd or the
 2 Minneapolis Police Department protests.

3 **Q.** In light of those challenges and those experiences from
 4 that time, can you describe for the Court what lessons were
 5 learned by the Department or by the State Patrol in terms of
 6 handling these types of events.

7 **A.** There were several lessons learned. I would say from
 8 the State Patrol's perspective, we learned that we needed to
 9 find a way to quickly mobilize large numbers of State Patrol
 10 to be able to respond to an area, and that was something
 11 that we had not really -- had never had to do before.

12 In the few events where the State Patrol had been
 13 called in to a major special event, it had been a special
 14 event, like the Super Bowl or like the Republican National
 15 Convention, where we knew months in advance it was coming.
 16 You could plan and stage for this.

17 But an organically spontaneous event calling upon
 18 us to not just move a couple hundred troopers, but literally
 19 to strip every highway in the state of Minnesota of all of
 20 the troopers they had to try and respond was an
 21 extraordinary event that we had never seen.

22 So how to mobilize them, how to work with the
 23 National Guard was also a lesson learned. We learned about
 24 what -- the capabilities of the Minnesota National Guard,
 25 how quickly they could mobilize.

166

1 We also had to work through emergency declarations
 2 by the governor, the activation of the National Guard, and
 3 then how to actually get them into theater and get them into
 4 appropriate positions.

5 We learned that -- communication became one of the
 6 key points that I think we learned probably most acutely in
 7 especially the May 2020 events. Communication with the
 8 media was -- right away that was one of the points that we
 9 recognized that we needed to do more with, but also
 10 communication with our elected officials and communications
 11 with community groups were all part and parcel of, I think,
 12 some of the lessons learned that we've applied as we moved
 13 forward from that day.

14 **Q.** Commissioner, as a clarification, how many troopers were
 15 mobilized in response to May 2020?

16 **A.** Every trooper that was able and ready in the state of
 17 Minnesota was mobilized and brought into the Twin Cities to
 18 respond.

19 **Q.** And that had never happened before?

20 **A.** That had never happened before.

21 **Q.** Commissioner, were there any lessons learned regarding
 22 the importance of media credentials or identification of
 23 press members?

24 **A.** Yes, there were.

25 **Q.** What were those lessons?

167

1 **A.** I believe one of the first nights that the State Patrol
 2 was out on Lake Street we got calls that we had arrested
 3 members of the media, and part of the question we had was
 4 how do we determine who is a member of the media and so we
 5 began asking the question of what credentials would clearly
 6 identify members of the media so that we could expedite
 7 their release if they were arrested or avoid arresting them
 8 if that was possible. So credentials became a topic very
 9 early on.

10 From that point on, I think virtually every event
 11 since then we have reminded the media via Twitter or social
 12 media to please have credentials with them and visible if at
 13 all possible so that we can avoid any unnecessary encounters
 14 with the media and so that we can facilitate -- in those
 15 cases where we do end up making an arrest with the media, so
 16 we can expedite their release as quickly as possible.

17 **Q.** With regards to both those actions related to media and
 18 broadly, what other actions did the Department take to act
 19 or implement the lessons learned from May of 2020?

20 **A.** There have been several. I would say the ones that come
 21 most -- come to mind, we tasked Bruce Gordon, who is the
 22 director of communications for the Commissioner's Office, to
 23 work with the media to talk about best practices, lessons
 24 learned to try and figure out what we should gather from the
 25 May 2020 events.

168

1 Beyond that, we committed to having a more robust
 2 schedule of briefings and trainings with the media, which we
 3 did do, as we got into what we call OSN, the Operation --
 4 OSN, which is the Chauvin trial preparation. We did
 5 trainings with them. We worked with the media before that.
 6 We embedded media into our ranks, asked them to come join us
 7 within -- on the inside of the line to help facilitate their
 8 understanding of what we were doing.

9 And subsequent to those events we have contracted
 10 with 21CP, 21st Century Policing, which is a nonprofit
 11 organization or a think tank organization. They were the
 12 group that facilitated the Deadly Force Encounters Working
 13 Group that Keith Ellison and I put together. But we asked
 14 them to do an outreach to the media subsequent to --

15 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I am going to object to
 16 the narrative.

17 THE COURT: You object to the narrative?

18 MR. RIACH: Object that the witness is delivering
 19 a narrative answer. We have had multiple questions now
 20 where Mr. -- or Commissioner Harrington has talked for
 21 three, four, five minutes at a time. Don't have a problem
 22 with the information coming out, but we would just prefer
 23 some interplay between counsel and Commissioner Harrington.

24 THE COURT: I believe the question was what type
 25 of -- state the question that you asked.

169

1 MR. HSU: What did the Department or the State
 2 Patrol do to act on the lessons learned from May 2020.

3 THE COURT: Okay. Overruled. You may continue
 4 with your answer.

5 THE WITNESS: Thank you. I was just wrapping up.
 6 But we did contract with 21CP. They have
 7 surveyed, conducted focus groups and conducted interviews
 8 with members of the media, and I believe within the next
 9 month we will have a document which will document some
 10 additional best practices, that the Department of Public
 11 Safety paid for their work, to make sure that we are
 12 reaching out to the media.

13 We have had multiple meetings with the media
 14 throughout to have this conversation with them to try and
 15 figure out where there are concerns and how do we best meet
 16 them.

17 BY MR. HSU:

18 Q. Thank you, Commissioner. Were there any lessons or
 19 actions taken with regard to the efficacy of mass arrest
 20 actions following May 2020?

21 A. Yes, there were.

22 Q. What were those?

23 A. Two in particular.

24 One, we made a directive, and it has been
 25 repeated -- ordered to be repeated at every roll call before

170

1 a team would go out, to remind them of First Amendment
 2 protest policies and to make sure that they were avoiding
 3 arresting the media if at all possible.

4 In addition to that, we also began working on a
 5 policy to expedite release. If we did have a media person
 6 that came into contact with the State Patrol, to get them
 7 released as quickly as possible thereafter.

8 Q. Commissioner, were those policies and practices in
 9 effect in April of 2021?

10 A. Yes, they were.

11 Q. And you mentioned it briefly, but could you please
 12 describe for the Court, what is Operation Safety Net?

13 A. Operation Safety Net was the plan for how the City of
 14 Minneapolis and the County of Hennepin and, by extension,
 15 the State of Minnesota would be prepared for potential
 16 protests in the wake of the Derek Chauvin trial.

17 From a historical perspective, if we look at LA,
 18 Oakland, Ferguson, there are oftentimes riots that happen
 19 when the precipitating event started, but there are also at
 20 times riots or civil disturbances that occur when the jury's
 21 verdict comes out and it is not viewed favorably by the
 22 public.

23 Having no pre-knowledge of how the court case
 24 would resolve, Minneapolis began planning in July of 2020
 25 for how they should be prepared for potential protests

171

1 during the trial. That plan was being conducted through the
 2 fall.

3 And in January of 2021 the State reviewed the
 4 plan, because there was then a request from the City of
 5 Minneapolis for potentially National Guard and State Patrol
 6 and DNR assets to be assigned to this plan. The plan was
 7 under-resourced in our opinion and at that time the State
 8 Patrol, Minnesota National Guard, DNR, and others joined
 9 with Minneapolis and Hennepin County into unified command
 10 for a planning effort to revise the Operation Safety Net
 11 plan, and we worked together through -- from January through
 12 the end of the trial, when we demobilized and went through
 13 what we call phase four.

14 Q. Commissioner, was the State Patrol and the Department of
 15 Public Safety, did they join OSN in response to requests
 16 from Minneapolis?

17 A. Yes, we did.

18 Q. And was the State Patrol or the Department of Public
 19 Safety responsible for any other law enforcement agencies
 20 involved with OSN?

21 A. No, we were not.

22 Q. What is unified command?

23 A. Unified command is a concept that originally came out of
 24 the fire service, but it comes out of FEMA or NIMS, the
 25 National Incident Management System. It is the recognition

172

1 that there are certain events, catastrophes that occur that
 2 are too big for any one department to be able to handle on
 3 its own.

4 And when you bring in multiple other jurisdictions
 5 and multiple other departments to respond to whether it's a
 6 special alarm fire, a tornado, a flood, or a civil
 7 disturbance, there has to be a format for how the entities
 8 that are joining into the effort work together.

9 And so unified command brings the senior staffs of
 10 those organizations together so that they can work in
 11 concert and in a coordinated fashion to respond to whatever
 12 it is that you are responding to, once again, natural or
 13 man-made disaster.

14 Q. Who directs the mission goals under a unified command
 15 structure?

16 A. The local jurisdiction has the -- is the decision-maker
 17 under unified command. While it's a unified command and
 18 everybody is at the table together, ultimately the decision
 19 of what you do in a particular case in a particular
 20 jurisdiction resides with the local jurisdiction that has
 21 that.

22 So, for example, if we have a crisis that happens
 23 in St. Paul, while the State Patrol may well be there as
 24 part of unified command, the St. Paul Police Department and
 25 Todd Axtell would be the decision-maker for that particular

173

1 incident.
 2 **Q.** And would State Patrol -- in the context of Operation
 3 Safety Net, would the State Patrol retain control over its
 4 own troopers?

5 **A.** Yes. The State Patrol would have command staff that
 6 would be responsible for the direction of its own personnel
 7 while we're operating under -- whether in mutual aid or
 8 under the Operation Safety Net under unified command.

9 **Q.** And would State Patrol have any authority to direct the
 10 conduct or actions of other agencies under Operation Safety
 11 Net?

12 **A.** No, we have no legal authority over any other agencies
 13 other than our own.

14 THE COURT: Other than?

15 THE WITNESS: Other than our own. Sorry.

16 BY MR. HSU:

17 **Q.** Commissioner, turning to the events in Brooklyn Center
 18 in April 2021, how did the Department of Public Safety and
 19 State Patrol become involved there?

20 **A.** On April 11th, as I recall, the Brooklyn Center Police
 21 Department had an officer-involved shooting. BCA does the
 22 investigations on the officer-involved shootings and so DPS,
 23 under the auspices of BCA, and the use of force team were
 24 sent to do the investigation there.

25 Shortly after their arrival at the scene, there

Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR
 651-848-1225

175

1 charge of the mission goals?

2 **A.** At the beginning Brooklyn Center Police Department was
 3 in charge, and then within a day or so the mayor relieved
 4 the chief of police of his position and there was a period
 5 where it was unclear who was in charge of the Brooklyn
 6 Center policing effort.

7 And during that time frame Hennepin County Sheriff
 8 Dave Hutchinson assumed command of the incident when there
 9 was a vacuum in place. He remained in command of the
 10 incident for the next four or five days until the new
 11 appointed -- newly-appointed interim chief for Brooklyn
 12 Center re-assumed command of the operation.

13 **Q.** At any point did Minnesota State Patrol or the
 14 Department of Public Safety assume command of the incident?

15 **A.** No, at no point were we in charge of the incident.

16 **Q.** Was the Department of Public Safety or State Patrol ever
 17 responsible for any other law enforcement agency at Brooklyn
 18 Center?

19 **A.** No, we were not.

20 **Q.** Was the Department of Public Safety or the Minnesota
 21 State Patrol ever issuing commands to other law enforcement
 22 agencies in Brooklyn Center?

23 **A.** No, we were not.

24 **Q.** Thank you, Commissioner.

25 MR. HSU: I have no further questions.

176

1 was a report that crowds had gathered at the crime scene and
 2 that there was cars being broken, windows being broken,
 3 there was a crowd that was refusing to leave.

4 Brooklyn Center had not been part of Operation
 5 Safety Net. The Hennepin County chiefs or what we would
 6 call the west metro chiefs of police had made a decision
 7 that they would create a mobile field force of their own,
 8 but that they were not going to move into Minneapolis as
 9 part of Operation Safety Net. Brooklyn Center was one of
 10 those departments.

11

And so as the protests grew at the crime scene,

12 they called in the West Metro Command Team and they
 13 responded there. They were able to disperse the crowd from
 14 there, but shortly thereafter we got reports that that crowd
 15 was now moving to the Brooklyn Center Police Department over
 16 on Humboldt. The West Metro Command went with them to
 17 protect the Brooklyn Center Police Department and City Hall.

18 Hennepin County, which is -- was part of Operation
 19 Safety Net and where Brooklyn Center resides, was part of
 20 Operation Safety Net and so as the crowd grew on that first
 21 night, Hennepin County was asked to join in. And the State
 22 was asked to work with Hennepin County and with Brooklyn
 23 Center to assist them as there did not appear to be
 24 sufficient resources to respond to Brooklyn Center.

25 **Q.** And in Brooklyn Center, was it the local entity in

1 THE COURT: Cross examination? And we can take a
 2 stretch break at this time. I will take one. If anyone
 3 else would like to join me, you may, just at your seats.

4 (Pause)

5 THE COURT: We are ready to resume.

6 MS. McGARRAUGH: We just lost our questioning
 7 lawyer.

8 THE COURT: Okay.

9 (Pause)

10 THE COURT: We are ready to proceed.

11 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

12 CROSS EXAMINATION

13 BY MR. RIACH:

14 **Q.** Good afternoon, Commissioner Harrington. My name is
 15 Kevin Riach. I'm an attorney for the plaintiffs.

16 **A.** Good afternoon.

17 **Q.** Now, you are familiar with the Police Officer Standards
 18 and Training Board, correct?

19 **A.** Yes, I am.

20 **Q.** That's a board that's organized within the Department of
 21 Public Safety, correct?

22 **A.** No, it is not.

23 **Q.** It's not a board organized within the Department of
 24 Public Safety?

25 **A.** No, it is not.

177

1 **Q.** What is it organized within?
 2 **A.** The POST Board is an independent standard and training
 3 board that is appointed by the governor. The Department of
 4 Public Safety did up until fairly recently provide their HR
 5 department, but it has its own board of directors, it has
 6 its own appointed executive director, and it does not report
 7 to the Department of Public Safety.
 8 **Q.** Are the Board employees employees of the Department of
 9 Public Safety?
 10 **A.** No, they're not.
 11 **Q.** All right. But you're familiar with the operations of
 12 the Board, correct?
 13 **A.** Yes. I have one member -- the BCA has one member that
 14 sits on the POST Board on the training section.
 15 **Q.** Okay. And you're aware that they from time to time
 16 promulgate model policies for law enforcement to use to
 17 guide their practices, correct?
 18 **A.** Yes, I am.
 19 **Q.** Sometimes those model policies are adopted and become
 20 mandatory policies; is that correct?
 21 **A.** If they propose a model policy and it is voted upon by
 22 the Board, it can become a mandatory policy for all state
 23 peace officers or POST agencies, yes.
 24 **Q.** It has to go through the rulemaking process at that
 25 point; is that right?

178

1 **A.** I'm not positive about whether it has to go through
 2 rulemaking or not.
 3 **Q.** Okay. It goes through some kind of legislative
 4 sausage-making and becomes mandatory for state law
 5 enforcement, though, if that's the course the Board chooses
 6 to take with the model policy?
 7 **A.** That has been my experience, yes.
 8 **Q.** Okay.
 9 MR. RIACH: Ms. Anderson, can you call up
 10 Exhibit 71, please, Plaintiffs' 71.
 11 BY MR. RIACH:
 12 **Q.** We'll see if you can see these on the screen. If that
 13 works, we'll just stick with the electronic version. Is
 14 that okay, Commissioner?
 15 **A.** Sure.
 16 **Q.** All right. Now, what you are looking at is a document
 17 labeled Plaintiffs' Exhibit 71. It says, "Background on
 18 Draft Model Policy on Public Assembly and First Amendment
 19 Activity" at the top of this document.
 20 THE COURT: Okay. You have to raise your voice or
 21 speak into the microphone, but we can't mumble what the
 22 document says.
 23 MR. RIACH: All right. Sorry, Your Honor.
 24 BY MR. RIACH:
 25 **Q.** You are looking at a document. This is marked

180

<p style="text-align: right;">181</p> <p>1 under discussion at the POST Board?</p> <p>2 A. Not in particular, no.</p> <p>3 Q. Okay. Now, the POST Board maintains a website, correct?</p> <p>4 A. That's correct.</p> <p>5 Q. And that's located within the Department of Public</p> <p>6 Safety website, correct?</p> <p>7 A. There's a link to the POST Board from the Department of</p> <p>8 Public Safety, but the POST Board has its own website.</p> <p>9 Q. Okay. But you can get there from the Department of</p> <p>10 Public Safety website, correct?</p> <p>11 A. I'm certain you can.</p> <p>12 Q. Go to the section that says, "Boards" and click on it</p> <p>13 and it says, "Department" -- or it says, "POST Board," and</p> <p>14 you click on that and then it takes you through to the POST</p> <p>15 Board website?</p> <p>16 A. I have no doubt that we can get there from there.</p> <p>17 Q. All right. Very good. Are you aware that model</p> <p>18 policies are regularly posted on the Peace Officer Standards</p> <p>19 and Training Board website for review prior to discussion by</p> <p>20 the POST Board at their sessions?</p> <p>21 A. Yes, I am.</p> <p>22 Q. Okay.</p> <p>23 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, we would move to admit</p> <p>24 Document 71, the POST Board model policy we've been</p> <p>25 discussing.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">183</p> <p>1 such that the Court would need to use it?</p> <p>2 MR. RIACH: This exhibit is being offered to show</p> <p>3 that -- and we can include this argument in our briefing</p> <p>4 subsequent to this hearing.</p> <p>5 THE COURT: Is it offered for the truth of the</p> <p>6 matter asserted? What's its purpose?</p> <p>7 MR. RIACH: It's not, Your Honor. It's offered to</p> <p>8 show that a model policy has been developed that is --</p> <p>9 THE COURT: The relevance of a model policy is</p> <p>10 what?</p> <p>11 MR. RIACH: The relevance of the model policy is</p> <p>12 it shows that law enforcement officers from multiple</p> <p>13 agencies, who came together to promulgate this process with</p> <p>14 community activists, have determined that provisions similar</p> <p>15 to those contained within the plaintiffs' proposed</p> <p>16 injunction are feasible and, in fact, going to be adopted as</p> <p>17 best practices.</p> <p>18 I don't want to get into argument here during my</p> <p>19 cross examination, but this policy is relevant because it</p> <p>20 shows that what the plaintiffs have proposed is something</p> <p>21 that's been viewed as reasonable by multiple law enforcement</p> <p>22 officers.</p> <p>23 The members of the ad hoc committee that developed</p> <p>24 this policy were made up of four community activists and</p> <p>25 four law enforcement officers, including the head of the</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">182</p> <p>1 THE COURT: Any objection?</p> <p>2 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. The State would object</p> <p>3 to the admission of this document on several grounds, both</p> <p>4 it's hearsay and lack of foundation. The Commissioner has</p> <p>5 testified he's not previously reviewed this document or was</p> <p>6 ever involved in the creation or drafting of the same.</p> <p>7 Furthermore, the document at issue appears to be a</p> <p>8 draft policy, not a model policy approved through rulemaking</p> <p>9 process, and therefore should have no basis there.</p> <p>10 Furthermore, this exhibit was disclosed to state defendants</p> <p>11 yesterday and we would further object as an untimely</p> <p>12 disclosure of an exhibit as we didn't have sufficient time</p> <p>13 to review and prepare in response to the same.</p> <p>14 THE COURT: Anything further on this matter?</p> <p>15 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, with respect to the</p> <p>16 hearsay and the other evidentiary objections, I would just</p> <p>17 reiterate what's contained in our briefing on the State's</p> <p>18 motion in limine, that in proceedings such as the one we</p> <p>19 have here, a preliminary injunction proceeding, especially</p> <p>20 when there's limited time and opportunity to present live</p> <p>21 testimony about things like this policy, flexible standards</p> <p>22 of admission are allowed to permit the Court to have the</p> <p>23 information it needs to make the decision on the motion at</p> <p>24 issue in --</p> <p>25 THE COURT: What is this exhibit being offered for</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">184</p> <p>1 Sheriffs Association and the Minnesota Peace Officers</p> <p>2 Association. They came together and put this document</p> <p>3 together. It went before the POST Board last week, at the</p> <p>4 end of the week. The POST Board adopted it as a model</p> <p>5 policy and advanced it through for review as a mandatory</p> <p>6 policy. That adoption was unanimous by the entire POST</p> <p>7 Board.</p> <p>8 It's relevant because it shows that what we're</p> <p>9 asking for makes sense. Now, Commissioner Harrington hasn't</p> <p>10 reviewed it, so there's a limited amount of what I can ask</p> <p>11 him about within the document, but given the nature of this</p> <p>12 proceeding and the importance of the questions that the</p> <p>13 Court has to consider here, this is the kind of evidence</p> <p>14 that should be before the Court.</p> <p>15 If the state defendants want to contest the</p> <p>16 accuracy of this document, its validity, think it's full of</p> <p>17 errors, it's fraud, whatever, if they have some evidence</p> <p>18 that this isn't what it purports to be, they can certainly</p> <p>19 advance that in their briefing, but it should at least be</p> <p>20 before the Court. And I can represent this is pulled from</p> <p>21 the Department of Public Safety website link that goes to</p> <p>22 the POST Board.</p> <p>23 THE COURT: Counsel, do you wish to be heard?</p> <p>24 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. We would stress again</p> <p>25 that, as plaintiffs' counsel pointed out, this policy has</p>

185

1 yet to be passed as any sort of permanent rulemaking
 2 authority. It exists as a draft policy reviewed by the POST
 3 Board and that's all it is at this point.

4 Furthermore, to the extent that counsel alleges
 5 that this is a model policy crafted by experts in the field,
 6 we would further dispute this exhibit as an undisclosed
 7 expert opinion since plaintiff is offering it as apparent
 8 best practices without any supporting expert testimony or
 9 disclosures to support that inference.

10 THE COURT: The Court will admit it as an exhibit
 11 of the Court, and its weight and merit will be -- is
 12 evident, frankly, based on the arguments made by counsel.
 13 So for limited purposes, frankly, informational and not any,
 14 it appears, bearing on the issues before the Court, it will
 15 be admitted.

16 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

17 You can take that down, Ms. Anderson.

18 BY MR. RIACH:

19 Q. Commissioner Harrington, am I correct that no state
 20 trooper has been disciplined for arresting a journalist
 21 during your tenure as the commissioner of Public Safety?

22 A. Not to my knowledge.

23 Q. Has any state trooper been disciplined for using force
 24 against a journalist during your tenure as commissioner of
 25 Public Safety?

186

1 A. Not to my knowledge.

2 Q. And has any state trooper been disciplined for using
 3 chemical weapons against a journalist during your tenure as
 4 commissioner of Public Safety?

5 A. Not to my knowledge.

6 MR. RIACH: Ms. Anderson, can you call up
 7 Exhibit 68, please.

8 BY MR. RIACH:

9 Q. Do you recognize the image that you are seeing on the
 10 screen there, Commissioner Harrington?

11 A. No, I do not.

12 Q. Okay.

13 MR. RIACH: Can you play the first part of this --
 14 the first minute of this video, Ms. Anderson.

15 MR. HSU: Objection, Your Honor. The video has
 16 not been offered into evidence and on its face it appears to
 17 be a hearsay statement.

18 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I'm simply seeing if we
 19 can get some foundation on this. If not, I am going to
 20 offer it as an exhibit anyways and if the State has a
 21 hearsay objection, I'll address that when the State makes
 22 its objection. I'm sorry if the Court can't hear me. I'll
 23 try to move --

24 THE COURT: I couldn't hear you. You said you
 25 have no foundation?

187

1 MR. RIACH: Not yet. Not yet. And it may not
 2 have any when I'm done, Your Honor, but I would like to at
 3 least show Mr. -- Commissioner Harrington the first section
 4 of the video and ask him foundational questions. If he has
 5 none, I still intend to offer it as an exhibit. The State,
 6 I anticipate, will object on hearsay and foundational
 7 grounds. I'll make my argument. Then the Court can decide
 8 what it would like to do. But it should be pretty brief.

9 THE COURT: You may proceed as you have indicated.
 10 The matter -- the exhibit is not admitted. You're seeking
 11 to lay foundation for it, correct?

12 MR. RIACH: That's correct, Your Honor.

13 THE COURT: Okay.

14 MR. RIACH: Okay. Can you play the first minute
 15 of the video, Ms. Anderson.

16 (Pause)

17 BY MR. RIACH:

18 Q. While we are awaiting the video -- oh, maybe we've got
 19 it here.

20 (Video recording played)

21 Q. Having watched the first minute or so of this video, do
 22 you recall having seen this video before?

23 A. I don't recall it particularly, no.

24 Q. Are you familiar with the arrest of Omar Jimenez in May
 25 of 2020?

188

1 A. I'm not particularly -- I do not recall that in
 2 particular, no.

3 Q. Okay. Do you recall discussion during the George Floyd
 4 protests of a CNN news crew being arrested while they were
 5 covering the protests?

6 A. Yes, I do.

7 Q. Okay. And what do you recall about that discussion?

8 A. That there was a complaint, that we were told that a CNN
 9 group was arrested. We got a call -- I believe the
 10 governor's office received a call from the CEO of CNN. The
 11 governor responded. And CNN did not ever file a complaint
 12 with internal affairs alleging any misconduct against the
 13 State Patrol subsequent to that.

14 Q. Did you have any conversations with Governor Walz about
 15 that arrest?

16 A. Nothing in particular. I heard from Governor Walz his
 17 displeasure at having news media arrested, so that was very
 18 clear from his public statements and the statements we had
 19 as we were coordinating resources.

20 Q. Did you have any discussions with Colonel Langer, the
 21 State Patrol commander, about the arrest of the CNN crew?

22 A. We had the same level of conversation about that that
 23 was not the way we wanted to be doing business and that we
 24 needed to make sure that we could identify and expedite --
 25 in those cases where someone was arrested, that we could

189

1 expedite their release as quickly as possible.
 2 **Q.** Did you ask any questions of Colonel Langer about what
 3 happened?
 4 **A.** No, not in particular.
 5 **Q.** All right. Were you concerned that you heard a report
 6 that state troopers had arrested a CNN crew?
 7 **A.** Yes, I was.
 8 **Q.** And why were you concerned?
 9 **A.** As I said earlier, I really do believe that the media is
 10 a partner that we need to work with and it is -- whenever
 11 you are making an arrest, I think, especially an arrest of
 12 the media, I think that's something that should be -- that
 13 is concerning. It is not something that we do every day.
 14 It is an exceptional -- it should be an exceptional event.
 15 And even in the context of what was a fairly massive amount
 16 of civil unrest, it still was concerning that it happened.
 17 And, frankly, there also was just a concern of
 18 what were -- what happened behind the scene there. And so I
 19 was assuming that we would have a complaint from them that
 20 would then be investigated and we would have some facts that
 21 would come out of that. They never did choose to make the
 22 complaint and so I don't know that there was any
 23 investigation beyond the initial complaint about it.
 24 **Q.** So there was no complaint, so the State Patrol, as far
 25 as you know, never investigated the event further?

190

1 **A.** Not that I'm aware of, no.
 2 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, at this time I would move
 3 to admit Plaintiffs' Exhibit 68. I anticipate the State
 4 will have a number of objections. I'll make the same
 5 arguments right out of the gate, which is this is a very
 6 important matter for the Court to -- I'm sorry. I can tell
 7 now that I am in mike range. This is a very important
 8 matter for the Court, making this decision, and the Court
 9 should see and hear all the relevant evidence that can be
 10 put before it.
 11 We're constrained by the nature of this hearing
 12 and these proceedings from duly authenticating things like
 13 this video. But if the State has any argument, after
 14 viewing the video, that it doesn't -- that it purports to
 15 show something that didn't happen, that it's inaccurate,
 16 that it's fraud, I would certainly welcome them presenting
 17 that evidence. Otherwise we would like to admit it for what
 18 it is.

19 And I do have a few more questions for
 20 Commissioner Harrington. I would like to watch the video
 21 with him and ask him a few follow-up questions based on
 22 what's in the video. I am not sure that intrudes into
 23 hearsay because I'm going to be asking him if what he sees
 24 is consistent with the policies he discussed on his direct
 25 examination. But that's what I would ask the Court for

191

1 permission to do at this time.
 2 THE COURT: Okay. And you said you want him to
 3 see it for what it is. What is "it"?
 4 MR. RIACH: It's a video of the arrest of Omar
 5 Jimenez, the CNN crew and the reporter that we were just
 6 discussing during my cross examination of Commissioner
 7 Harrington.
 8 THE COURT: Okay. Counsel?
 9 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. As counsel
 10 anticipated, we object to the admission of this exhibit on
 11 the grounds of hearsay and also on the grounds of
 12 foundation, authentication. Commissioner Harrington has
 13 testified he hasn't seen this video before.
 14 Furthermore, while we recognize the important
 15 issues before this Court, the issues with presenting a video
 16 like this unauthenticated is it appears to be an edited news
 17 clip. So we don't have the full extent, context, or scope
 18 of the footage or the events preceding or subsequent to.
 19 And as Commissioner Harrington has stated, he
 20 doesn't have the foundation to testify to those events
 21 specifically either. Accordingly, admitting this exhibit
 22 and presenting it here would risk misconception of the
 23 events at hand and offers an improper view as portrayed by
 24 this video.
 25 THE COURT: Any response?

192

1 MR. RIACH: We would just ask that the Court
 2 afford the evidence the weight the Court believes it
 3 deserves. I would --
 4 THE COURT: Is there foundation for it? Is it a
 5 complete -- how do I know that it's not edited? I just
 6 don't have -- I am trying to get some sense of
 7 authentication.
 8 MR. RIACH: Sure, Your Honor. And I'll represent
 9 to the Court that this is a video that I downloaded from the
 10 CNN website. And we can watch the video. I don't think
 11 there are any visible edits in the video. It's a matter of
 12 public record, frankly. It's been viewed many times around
 13 the world, including by Governor Walz. Really it's the
 14 conduct that is seen in the video that is what I would like
 15 to ask Commissioner Harrington about. If the Court has
 16 concerns that there's something amiss with the video,
 17 obviously the Court can reject this testimony and ignore
 18 what we see here.
 19 I would note that there are multiple affidavits,
 20 declarations that have already been submitted in support and
 21 opposition of this motion that contain hearsay, evidence
 22 without foundation. It's just the nature of these kinds of
 23 proceedings that some of these evidentiary rules have to be
 24 viewed flexibly. Otherwise important information is not
 25 considered as part of the process.

193

1 THE COURT: And do the Rules of Evidence apply?
 2 MR. RIACH: Well, I don't think they do, Your
 3 Honor, quite frankly. I think that in these kinds of
 4 proceedings the Court, especially with the experience that
 5 Your Honor has, you having seen testimony and viewed
 6 evidence many, many times over the years, can give the
 7 evidence the weight it deserves.

8 The Tenth Circuit Court of Appeals has said
 9 explicitly the Rules of Evidence do not apply in
 10 preliminary --

11 THE COURT: And the Eighth Circuit?

12 MR. RIACH: -- injunction proceedings. The Eighth
 13 Circuit, as far as I know, has not weighed in on this
 14 question, Your Honor, one way or the other.

15 THE COURT: Counsel?

16 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. With regards to the
 17 Rules of Evidence specifically, we would note that as the
 18 Court -- the case the Court cited in its recent order notes
 19 that while likelihood of success is a basis of preliminary
 20 injunction, success is still an aspect of that to whatever
 21 degree the Court should weigh it.

22 And to that end the admissibility of the evidence
 23 should still be weighed, particularly in cases like this
 24 where the authentication issue presents grave concerns about
 25 the video itself, that plaintiffs can't prove their case

195

1 MR. HSU: No, Your Honor. Our position is that
 2 the Rules of Evidence still apply. While that degree may or
 3 may not differ, the lack of foundation as to this video, the
 4 lack of authentication to determine the full scope of the
 5 events portrayed within the video, or lack thereof, are
 6 dispositive on the matter of its admissibility.

7 We are -- the State is not taking the position
 8 that there's bad faith or insincerity as to that, but the
 9 mere framing of the events as portrayed in the video, which
 10 we don't know whether it is edited or not, can shift the
 11 perspective and remove context, which informs those facts.

12 THE COURT: I'll overrule the objection and give
 13 the evidence the weight it deserves.

14 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

15 Ms. Anderson, can you press play.

16 (Video recording played)

17 MR. RIACH: You can stop the video now.

18 THE COURT: And so let's address the exhibit that
 19 has been admitted. The purpose of that exhibit -- it is
 20 being admitted for what? Because it needs to have some
 21 limiting purposes, correct? You are not indicating that the
 22 statements of the reporter are offered for the truth of the
 23 matter asserted; is that right?

24 MR. RIACH: That's correct, Your Honor. The
 25 purpose of this exhibit is to ask Commissioner Harrington

194

1 through evidence like this because of some of the
 2 admissibility issues and the core aspects of them.

3 THE COURT: What are the grave concerns as to the
 4 authenticity of what is being reflected here?

5 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor. As it pertains to this
 6 one, the circumstances and facts surrounding this video, the
 7 actions portrayed within are not fully informed because we
 8 don't know the scope of this video and its full recording.

9 THE COURT: So you think it was a staged event and
 10 did not happen?

11 MR. HSU: No, Your Honor. I'm certainly not
 12 stating that, but the dynamic circumstances of these types
 13 of crowd situations require a full contextual consideration.
 14 The difficulties with presenting this video here,
 15 particularly with Commissioner Harrington, is that he has
 16 stated he doesn't have the foundation to address those
 17 contextual concerns with this exhibit.

18 And admitting it with him and through him would
 19 prejudice the State particularly -- unfairly, we would
 20 argue, particularly in light of the argument of time issues.
 21 This video has existed, as counsel portends. He has had
 22 opportunity to find the source if he chose to.

23 THE COURT: I don't understand. You're saying
 24 there's a problem of timing and that there's been some bad
 25 faith on the part of the proponent of this evidence?

196

1 some questions about the State Patrol conduct that's
 2 displayed in the video and the propriety of that conduct
 3 under the Department of Public Safety policies that were
 4 discussed on direct examination.

5 THE COURT: So the description of what is going on
 6 by the reporter is not evidence, it is the visual depiction
 7 of what is going on that is evidence; is that what you are
 8 indicating?

9 MR. RIACH: That's correct, Your Honor.

10 THE COURT: Okay. Just for clarification.

11 MR. RIACH: Thank you.

12 Can you please call up Defense Exhibit 15 and turn
 13 to page 2 of that exhibit, Ms. Anderson. Can you close the
 14 exhibit, please. Defense Exhibit 15, please. Thank you.

15 There we go, page 2. Actually, can you move -- here we are.

16 BY MR. RIACH:

17 Q. One of the rules that's listed on this exhibit,
 18 Commissioner Harrington, under Principle Two, rule number 4,
 19 is: "Peace officers shall take no action knowing it will
 20 violate the constitutional rights of any person."

21 Is the conduct that we just witnessed, is it the
 22 position of the Department of Public Safety that that
 23 conduct is consistent with this rule?

24 A. Having not been at the scene and having only seen this
 25 video, I do not know the full context of why they were

197

1 arrested or what the circumstances that surround that are.
 2 So I'm unable to give you an answer based on what I've just
 3 seen.
 4 **Q.** Okay. Rule number 6 states, "Peace officers learning of
 5 conduct or observing conduct which is in violation of any
 6 law or policy of this department shall take action and/or
 7 report the incident to the officer's immediate
 8 supervisor...."

9 Are you aware of any internal reports or
 10 complaints based on this incident?

11 **A.** I'm not sure what you mean by "internal reports."

12 **Q.** Fair point. Let me rephrase the question. Are you
 13 aware of any state troopers who reported this incident to
 14 their supervisor?

15 **A.** I cannot say that I know in particular. I know that
 16 State Patrol documents all arrests as a matter of general
 17 practice and procedure. So it would be unusual in my
 18 experience for them not to document an arrest.

19 **Q.** Okay. But no trooper, to your knowledge, reported this
 20 arrest as a violation of the rules that we're looking at
 21 right now; is that correct?

22 **A.** None that I'm aware of, no.

23 **Q.** And you haven't -- prior to today you hadn't seen this
 24 video, correct?

25 **A.** I don't remember seeing this particular video.

198

1 **Q.** Okay. And you hadn't looked into this incident at all,
 2 correct?

3 **A.** No, other than to check whether -- I knew that there had
 4 been CNN reporters arrested. I checked to see if a
 5 complaint had been lodged by CNN; and when I found that
 6 there was no complaint lodged by CNN, I didn't pursue the
 7 matter further than that.

8 **Q.** Okay.

9 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, it's my understanding we
 10 have a hard stop at 3:30; is that correct?

11 THE COURT: That's correct.

12 MR. RIACH: Well, I will end my cross examination
 13 now. Thank you, Commissioner Harrington.

14 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

15 THE COURT: Is there anything further for this
 16 witness?

17 MR. HSU: Nothing further, Your Honor.

18 THE COURT: May the witness be excused?

19 MR. HSU: Yes, Your Honor.

20 THE COURT: Sir, you are excused.

21 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, the defense calls Major
 22 Joseph Dwyer.

23 And, Your Honor, while we're waiting for Major
 24 Dwyer, I would just like to note for the record that based
 25 off our rough timekeeping, we've put on approximately an

Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR
 651-848-1225

199

1 hour and 15 minutes of testimony, which includes both of our
 2 cross examinations.
 3 So I understand that there's a hard stop today at
 4 3:30 and that Your Honor has other things on her schedule.
 5 I just want to mention that, as a result, we will not get as
 6 much time to put on our affirmative testimony as plaintiffs
 7 were allotted.

8 THE COURT: Okay. Are there witnesses that you
 9 are planning to excuse because of that?

10 MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor. We were thinking
 11 that we were going to be spending more than 40 minutes with
 12 Major Dwyer inasmuch as there's a lot of ground to cover
 13 here with regard to the unrest in May of 2020, as well as
 14 April of 2021.

15 So, from that standpoint, I have been trying to
 16 cut questions on my outline here to make sure that we cover
 17 everything that we believe Your Honor would need to hear.
 18 That being said, I am nervous about being done by 3:30. And
 19 then, of course, plaintiffs will want to cross-examine.

20 THE COURT: Certainly. And so it may mean that we
 21 need to schedule more time for the hearing.

22 MS. LANDRUM: I will move as quickly as humanly
 23 possible, Your Honor, but I worry that we won't be able to
 24 cover everything that we had hoped.

25 THE COURT: I think we need to proceed as you see

200

1 fit to proceed professionally. If we need to have more time
 2 for this hearing, we will have more time. The Court's
 3 schedule is not going to impede the ability to fairly
 4 adjudicate this issue. Okay?

5 MS. LANDRUM: Absolutely.

6 THE COURT: And so I'm not going to end the
 7 hearing and the submission of evidence and the presentation
 8 of witnesses and close and take the matter under advisement
 9 based on the 3:30 stop. Okay?

10 MS. LANDRUM: Okay, Your Honor.

11 THE COURT: So if we need to, we will reconvene.
 12 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor. We call
 13 Major Dwyer to the stand. Thank you.

14 (Witness sworn)

15 COURT REPORTER: You can have a seat. If you
 16 could state your name, spelling your first and last name,
 17 please.

18 THE WITNESS: Joseph Jason Dwyer. Last name
 19 D-w-y-e-r.

20 (Joseph Dwyer)

21 DIRECT EXAMINATION

22 BY MS. LANDRUM:

23 **Q.** Good afternoon, Major. Are you currently employed?

24 **A.** Yes, ma'am, I am.

25 **Q.** Where is that?

<p style="text-align: right;">201</p> <p>1 A. With the Department of Public Safety, specifically the 2 Minnesota State Patrol. 3 Q. And how long have you been working for the Minnesota 4 Department -- or for Minnesota State Patrol? 5 A. Since May of 1997. 24 years. 6 Q. What is your current title? 7 A. I hold the rank of major. 8 Q. And could you describe for the Court briefly your 9 duties. 10 A. Certainly. As a rank of major, we oversee an 11 operational region. So at this time or in the near future 12 it will be the southern region of the state of Minnesota. 13 And then currently I'm also on special assignment in the 14 realm of demonstration preparedness. 15 Q. Major, does Minnesota State Patrol have a mission 16 statement? 17 A. It does. 18 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, permission to publish 19 Exhibit 1 to the witness? 20 THE COURT: You may. 21 MS. LANDRUM: Ms. Kosek, would you please. Thank 22 you. 23 BY MS. LANDRUM: 24 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 1? 25 A. I do.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">203</p> <p>1 conduct of sworn members. 2 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of this policy 3 as Ms. Kosek is cycling through it? 4 A. Yes, it is. 5 MS. LANDRUM: State defendants move to admit 6 Exhibit 12 into evidence, Your Honor. 7 THE COURT: Any objection? 8 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor. 9 THE COURT: Exhibit 12 is received. 10 BY MS. LANDRUM: 11 Q. Major, what's the purpose of this conduct policy? 12 A. That is to provide guiding principles for all of our 13 members to abide by and to not only set the parameters of 14 how they'll conduct themselves during their work hours, but 15 also outside of those. 16 Q. Major, I would like to talk to you next about training. 17 Are you familiar with the training required to become a 18 Minnesota State Patrol trooper? 19 A. Yes, I am. 20 Q. Can you describe that briefly for the Court. 21 A. So our agency requires that members receive or hold a 22 two- or four-year degree in law enforcement or criminal 23 justice or there is reciprocity through -- from military 24 partners, but we also have a law enforcement training 25 opportunities program where an individual can hold a two- or</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">202</p> <p>1 Q. What is it? 2 A. That is our General Order, specifically the policy 3 related to the mission statement, vision statement, and core 4 values. 5 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of that mission 6 statement? 7 A. Yes, it does. 8 MS. LANDRUM: State defendants move to admit 9 Exhibit 1. 10 THE COURT: Any objection? 11 MR. RIACH: No objection. 12 THE COURT: Exhibit 1 is received. 13 BY MS. LANDRUM: 14 Q. Major, are there any expectations regarding trooper 15 conduct as they work to achieve this mission as we see here 16 in Exhibit 1? 17 A. Most certainly. 18 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, permission to publish to 19 the witness Exhibit 12? 20 THE COURT: You may. 21 BY MS. LANDRUM: 22 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 12? 23 A. I do. 24 Q. What is it? 25 A. That is our General Order again, our policy related to</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">204</p> <p>1 four-year degree in any realm and then our agency, through 2 the use of MnSCU universities, will provide condensed law 3 enforcement training for them to attend our academy. 4 Q. And then can you briefly describe what's required for 5 the academy. 6 A. So our academy is a 16-week residential academy where 7 cadets are exposed to a vast variety of topics related to 8 the State Patrol. 9 Q. Do troopers receive any dedicated training on how to 10 respond to mass unrest or mass violence? 11 A. So there is a module in the academy and that's an 12 eight-hour course. 13 Q. Do troopers receive any dedicated training on how to 14 interact with the media during incidents of mass unrest or 15 mass violence? 16 A. They do. 17 Q. Can you describe that for the Court. 18 A. So that is a part of the eight-hour module, and they 19 also receive another block on media relations. 20 Q. Has there been any additional training of Minnesota 21 State Patrol troopers since the unrest that occurred in 22 Minneapolis in May of 2020? 23 A. There has been. 24 MS. LANDRUM: Permission, Your Honor, to publish 25 Exhibit 19 to the witness?</p>

	205		207
1 THE COURT: You may.		1 BY MS. LANDRUM:	
2 BY MS. LANDRUM:		2 Q. Major, what's the purpose of this First Amendment	
3 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 19?		3 policy?	
4 A. I do.		4 A. Much like our other policies, it's to provide us	
5 Q. And as Ms. Kosek is going through it, can you just		5 guidance and those guiding principles on how troopers will	
6 describe what this is to the Court.		6 conduct themselves in, this instance, First Amendment	
7 A. So it is a joint venture with the Department of Public		7 assemblies.	
8 Safety and the Department of Natural Resources on the topic		8 Q. Are troopers trained on this policy?	
9 of media relations.		9 A. Yes, they are.	
10 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of the training		10 Q. Can you explain that to the Court.	
11 that you were just referencing?		11 A. So during the course of the academy, all of our policies	
12 A. Yes, it does.		12 are introduced and they, through training, the cadets,	
13 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, state defendants move to		13 trooper candidates, need to have an understanding of that	
14 admit Exhibit 19.		14 policy before they sign off on that.	
15 THE COURT: Any objection?		15 Q. Major, I would like to talk to you a little bit about	
16 MR. RIACH: No objection.		16 trooper performance. Does Minnesota State Patrol have a	
17 THE COURT: It is received in evidence,		17 process in place for evaluating trooper performance?	
18 Exhibit 19.		18 A. We do.	
19 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.		19 Q. Can you describe that to the Court.	
20 BY MS. LANDRUM:		20 A. So we engage in annual evaluations, and they are	
21 Q. Major, why were troopers required to take this training?		21 delivered by March 15th of each year. And even though	
22 A. This was an initiative prior to the operation known as		22 there's an annual performance evaluation delivered on a	
23 Safety Net in the city of Minneapolis leading up to the		23 specific -- or by a specific date, there's feedback that	
24 trials in an effort to provide them additional training.		24 each trooper will receive during the course of the year so	
25 Q. Did troopers have to certify that they took this		25 they can make corrective actions as necessary so it's not	
	206		208
1 training?		1 memorialized in the document if they change their	
2 A. They did.		2 trajectory.	
3 Q. Was there a date upon which they had to certify that?		3 Q. For purposes of providing that feedback throughout the	
4 A. It was prior to April 1st.		4 year, Major, if discipline were to become necessary, does	
5 Q. Major, does Minnesota State Patrol -- April of 2021, did		5 Minnesota State Patrol have a procedure for that?	
6 you say?		6 A. Yes, we do.	
7 A. Yes, that is correct, ma'am.		7 Q. Can you describe that to the Court.	
8 Q. Does Minnesota State Patrol have any policies or		8 A. So our discipline process implements the use of an	
9 procedures pertaining to the treatment of media, Major?		9 outside agency, if you will, or outside entity. It's housed	
10 A. Yes, we do.		10 under the Department of Public Safety, but it is the	
11 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to publish Exhibit 2 to		11 Internal Affairs Division.	
12 the witness, Your Honor?		12 Q. Going back to discipline, though, that you might issue	
13 THE COURT: You may.		13 to someone under your ranks, is there a policy or a	
14 BY MS. LANDRUM:		14 procedure for that?	
15 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 2?		15 A. There is.	
16 A. Yes, I do. That's our First Amendment assemblies		16 Q. Could you describe that to the Court.	
17 policy, General Order.		17 A. So that would actually fall under the bargaining unit,	
18 Q. And Ms. Kosek has just cycled through the pages here on		18 collective bargaining, and the troopers' MLEA contract.	
19 the screen. Does it appear to be an accurate copy of that		19 Q. If a trooper were found to have violated a Minnesota	
20 First Amendment policy?		20 State Patrol policy pertaining to the treatment of media or	
21 A. It does.		21 any of the policies that we've discussed this afternoon,	
22 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, defendants move to admit		22 would they be subject to discipline?	
23 Exhibit 2 into evidence.		23 A. Yes, they would be.	
24 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor.		24 Q. Now, you just mentioned the Internal Affairs Department.	
25 THE COURT: Exhibit 2 is received.		25 MS. LANDRUM: I would like permission from the	

<p style="text-align: right;">209</p> <p>1 Court to publish to you Exhibit 11.</p> <p>2 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>3 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.</p> <p>4 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>5 Q. Do you recognize Exhibit 11, Major?</p> <p>6 A. Yes, I do.</p> <p>7 Q. And what is this?</p> <p>8 A. Our policy specific to investigations, and then the</p> <p>9 Minnesota Department of Public Safety's guidelines as well.</p> <p>10 Q. And Ms. Kosek has just cycled through on the screen the</p> <p>11 pages. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of the</p> <p>12 internal affairs policy?</p> <p>13 A. It does.</p> <p>14 MS. LANDRUM: Defendants move to admit Exhibit</p> <p>15 Number 11, Your Honor.</p> <p>16 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor.</p> <p>17 THE COURT: Exhibit Number 11 is received.</p> <p>18 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>19 Q. Major, do Minnesota State Patrol troopers or lieutenants</p> <p>20 or even members of your rank participate directly when</p> <p>21 internal affairs complaints are being investigated and</p> <p>22 making investigatory decisions?</p> <p>23 A. So this is an independent process. There will be</p> <p>24 initial conversations that will initiate the disciplinary</p> <p>25 process, but as far as our insertion, no.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">211</p> <p>1 A. There were.</p> <p>2 Q. As a state agency, statewide agency, was Minnesota State</p> <p>3 Patrol in charge of any of those other law enforcement</p> <p>4 agencies?</p> <p>5 A. They were not.</p> <p>6 Q. Why not?</p> <p>7 A. So our statutory existence from 299D is that of a</p> <p>8 separate entity. So we do not hold any authoritative power</p> <p>9 over any local jurisdiction or sheriff's jurisdiction of any</p> <p>10 of our allied agencies.</p> <p>11 Q. Does Minnesota State Patrol give orders to other law</p> <p>12 enforcement agencies?</p> <p>13 A. We do not.</p> <p>14 Q. When did Minnesota State Patrol's involvement on the</p> <p>15 ground in Minneapolis began in 2020?</p> <p>16 A. So specifically to our Mobile Response Team, we were</p> <p>17 requested on Tuesday, May 26th.</p> <p>18 Q. Requested by who?</p> <p>19 A. That would have been the Minneapolis Police Department.</p> <p>20 Q. And when did Minnesota State Patrol's involvement end in</p> <p>21 that unrest that was happening?</p> <p>22 A. So we were involved in demobilization. It would have</p> <p>23 been June 7th, which was a Sunday.</p> <p>24 Q. So I know we're talking about a substantial amount of</p> <p>25 time here and there's a lot of details to cover, but I want</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">210</p> <p>1 Q. And why is that?</p> <p>2 A. To provide transparency and to rule out any type of</p> <p>3 nepotism that may be claimed, independent from our agency.</p> <p>4 Q. Major, I would like to switch gears here and talk about</p> <p>5 May of 2020. Do you have any personal knowledge of what</p> <p>6 occurred in Minneapolis in May of 2020 following the murder</p> <p>7 of George Floyd?</p> <p>8 A. Yes, I do.</p> <p>9 Q. And how did you develop that personal knowledge?</p> <p>10 A. So I was -- at that time held the rank of captain and</p> <p>11 was a commander of our Mobile Response Team.</p> <p>12 Q. And during the testimony of Commissioner Harrington, he</p> <p>13 testified a little bit about what was occurring on the</p> <p>14 ground, but could you testify from your personal experience</p> <p>15 what was occurring on the ground during that time in</p> <p>16 Minneapolis.</p> <p>17 A. So at the time that our state assets were inserted,</p> <p>18 specifically the Mobile Response Team and then progressing</p> <p>19 to the entire State Patrol, it was an evolution of an event,</p> <p>20 reaching, you know, to various pinnacles of riotous</p> <p>21 behavior. At times, you know, reflecting back, it was</p> <p>22 complete pandemonium and, as far as details, just utter</p> <p>23 chaos.</p> <p>24 Q. Were there any other law enforcement agencies involved</p> <p>25 in the response in Minneapolis in May of 2020?</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">212</p> <p>1 to focus from your perspective as a law enforcement official</p> <p>2 on the ground the key events that Minnesota State Patrol</p> <p>3 participated in, going in chronological order to the best</p> <p>4 that you can.</p> <p>5 What was the first major event that Minnesota</p> <p>6 State Patrol was involved in on the ground?</p> <p>7 A. So that Tuesday we were asked to provide site security</p> <p>8 basically outside of the Third Precinct, but not an overt</p> <p>9 presence, standing behind a line of Minneapolis police</p> <p>10 officers. That night was drawn to a conclusion as most</p> <p>11 nights were, there was a pinnacle event and then activity</p> <p>12 subsided.</p> <p>13 The very next evening -- I should say that all of</p> <p>14 our troopers returned to their home destinations throughout</p> <p>15 the state and the very next evening was, like, the same</p> <p>16 cycle, notified at approximately the same time and then</p> <p>17 tasked with security again outside of the Minneapolis Police</p> <p>18 Department.</p> <p>19 Q. What precinct?</p> <p>20 A. The Third Precinct.</p> <p>21 Q. And what day was this? So you testified that you're</p> <p>22 securing the Third Precinct and this is the second night.</p> <p>23 What day is that?</p> <p>24 A. So that is Wednesday.</p> <p>25 Q. And what significant event happened there?</p>

<p>213</p> <p>1 A. So that was the -- again, escalation and really the 2 introduction of fires and continued looting, and the night 3 ended with automatic gunfire in a Target parking lot across 4 the street from our location.</p> <p>5 Q. Can you describe that in a little bit more detail. So 6 you mentioned fires. What was on fire? And you mentioned 7 gunfire. What are you referring to?</p> <p>8 A. Most certainly. So during the course of the evening the 9 fires had commenced. Actually, the one parts store, 10 AutoZone, had been the subject of arson previously. That 11 fire had restarted and it was totally engulfed at one point. 12 There was also a high-rise residential complex behind that 13 that was fully engulfed. So really it's this surreal 14 environment of fire and smoke and loud boisterous crowds and 15 riotous behavior, projectiles, and then holding firm through 16 the night.</p> <p>17 There was an incident over in the Target parking 18 lot with multiple gunshots, which led our troopers being out 19 in the open struggling to find concealment or cover. So our 20 whole team was, like, piled on top of each other behind like 21 a three-foot Jersey barrier trying to avoid any harm to our 22 team.</p> <p>23 Q. Major, did you take any videos of what occurred that 24 night with the fires?</p> <p>25 A. I took a variety of photos, and on the iPhone platform</p>	<p>215</p> <p>1 MS. LANDRUM: Oh, it's actually quite short. Can 2 you play it again.</p> <p>3 THE COURT: Let me ask you: Are these received in 4 evidence?</p> <p>5 MS. LANDRUM: I was trying to lay the foundation 6 and then I was going to offer them.</p> <p>7 THE COURT: Okay. So you are playing for him --</p> <p>8 MS. LANDRUM: Yes.</p> <p>9 THE COURT: -- to lay the foundation?</p> <p>10 MS. LANDRUM: Yes. Just to show it one more time.</p> <p>11 Sorry.</p> <p>12 (Video recording played)</p> <p>13 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>14 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate video, a copy of a 15 video that you took?</p> <p>16 A. It does.</p> <p>17 MS. LANDRUM: Defendants move to admit Exhibit 42, 18 both videos.</p> <p>19 MR. RIACH: No objection.</p> <p>20 THE COURT: They are received.</p> <p>21 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor. And was Your 22 Honor able to view those as they were being seen or would 23 Your Honor prefer to see them again?</p> <p>24 THE COURT: I would like to see them again, 25 please.</p>
<p>214</p> <p>1 some of those are saved as live photos, which convert to 2 videos, yes.</p> <p>3 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to publish to the witness 4 and to the Court Exhibit 42, which are two videos taken by 5 Major Dwyer?</p> <p>6 THE COURT: Any objection?</p> <p>7 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor.</p> <p>8 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>9 (Video recording played)</p> <p>10 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>11 Q. Do you recognize this video, Major?</p> <p>12 A. I do.</p> <p>13 Q. Was this a video you took?</p> <p>14 A. I did, yes.</p> <p>15 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of the video you 16 took?</p> <p>17 A. It is.</p> <p>18 Q. And is this the scene from the Third Precinct?</p> <p>19 A. It is, the intersection of Lake and Minnehaha.</p> <p>20 MS. LANDRUM: Exhibit 42, Your Honor, actually has 21 two videos within it. Permission to play the second one?</p> <p>22 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>23 (Video recording played)</p> <p>24 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>25 Q. Major --</p>	<p>216</p> <p>1 MS. LANDRUM: Perfect. Ms. Kosek, if you could 2 play them both in succession.</p> <p>3 (Video recording played)</p> <p>4 MS. LANDRUM: And the second one, if you could 5 enlarge the screen.</p> <p>6 (Video recording played)</p> <p>7 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>8 Q. So we just discussed what happened on that night in 9 front of the Third Precinct. From your standpoint, Major, 10 what was the next major event that Minnesota State Patrol 11 was involved in?</p> <p>12 A. So on the next shift cycle, which would have been 13 Thursday, we were actually removed from the Third Precinct 14 and that security aspect and given an assignment downtown 15 outside the First Precinct to provide security and then also 16 to prevent any type of looting on Nicollet Mall.</p> <p>17 Q. So you were reassigned away from the Third Precinct. 18 What happened that night at the Third Precinct?</p> <p>19 A. So that was the evening that the Third Precinct was 20 abandoned and destroyed.</p> <p>21 Q. The mission that Minnesota State Patrol was called to on 22 Nicollet Avenue that evening, can you just briefly describe 23 how that went.</p> <p>24 A. Yes. We progressed through the evening. There were a 25 variety of various crowds down in that downtown area, some</p>

217

1 scheduled events outside the First Precinct, but ultimately
 2 criminal and dangerous activity was curbed. There was some
 3 instance of damage to property on Nicollet Mall, but by and
 4 large it was evaded.

5 **Q.** What was the next key event for purposes of Minnesota
 6 State Patrol's participation during the unrest in
 7 Minneapolis in May 2020?

8 **A.** So it would have been that very same day, the Thursday
 9 evening into the early morning hours of Friday, we were
 10 tasked or I was advised that we needed to go down and
 11 establish as large as perimeter, based on the Third Precinct
 12 dynamic, as large as perimeter as possible to provide like a
 13 safety barrier so that the events that occurred on Tuesday,
 14 Wednesday, Thursday would not occur again.

15 **Q.** So was there significant concerns, safety concerns,
 16 around the area of the Third Precinct despite the fact that
 17 it now been sort of abandoned and lit on fire?

18 **A.** Without a doubt based on the previous night's activity,
 19 criminal and otherwise, yes.

20 **Q.** We've heard testimony when you were not in the room,
 21 Major, about the arrest of CNN -- a CNN crew. Were you
 22 aware that that happened?

23 **A.** I am.

24 **Q.** Are you aware of approximately when that happened?

25 **A.** It would have been that early morning hours of Friday.

218

1 **Q.** So was that the same time when Minnesota State Patrol
 2 was being called to establish a larger perimeter in that
 3 area?

4 **A.** Yes, it is.

5 **Q.** Was that a safe area?

6 **A.** Based on what we had seen transpire the previous two
 7 nights, the evacuation of the Third Precinct and the arson
 8 that occurred, it was not.

9 **Q.** Were individuals being dispersed or otherwise arrested
 10 in that area because of the safety concerns there and the
 11 looting and rioting and fires?

12 **A.** Yes, they were.

13 **Q.** Now, in order to establish the perimeter that you just
 14 mentioned, what did Minnesota State Patrol do to assist
 15 Minneapolis?

16 **A.** So really the first time in the history of our agency,
 17 we had called every state trooper and activated them in the
 18 early morning hours to respond to the city of Minneapolis.

19 **Q.** Had that ever happened before?

20 **A.** Not to my knowledge.

21 **Q.** What's the next significant event that occurred?

22 **A.** So we did establish that perimeter, just a large,
 23 multiple-block area. And then upon successfully doing that,
 24 we started the next cycle, which would have been Friday
 25 evening into Saturday morning.

219

1 **Q.** And so you mention "the next cycle." Where did that
 2 happen; where was that?

3 **A.** So on this particular day we were provided an assignment
 4 to respond to the area of the Fifth Precinct. There was a
 5 large demonstration outside there. Based on concerns of
 6 what had happened at the Third Precinct, we were asked to
 7 respond and try to prevent, you know, a similar situation of
 8 arson and damage and just harm to citizens in that area. So
 9 we did respond to that area. Immediately the crowd
 10 dispersed, and that was after curfew, so at that point we
 11 initiated patrolling the streets on foot patrol and issuing
 12 curfew citations, curfew enforcement basically.

13 **Q.** Okay. And that's around the area of the Fifth Precinct?

14 **A.** Yes, ma'am.

15 **Q.** What happened next?

16 **A.** So working collaboratively with Minneapolis Police
 17 Department, we did try to effect a mass arrest.

18 **Q.** And the Court has heard today that phrase, "mass
 19 arrest," but it would be helpful, I think, if you would just
 20 explain to the Court from your perspective. What is a mass
 21 arrest?

22 **A.** Yes. So in the arena of crowd control or crowd
 23 management, there are a couple of different tactics that we
 24 can employ.

25 One of it is crowd dispersal. The issue with

220

1 crowd dispersal, and especially given the environment that
 2 we were transgressing through, it just pushes the, if you
 3 will, problem area to another area or allows it to occur,
 4 you know, the next evening. So that's the cycle. It really
 5 doesn't culminate to an end.

6 A mass arrest situation, working in conjunction
 7 with various departments, if you have enough resources to
 8 encircle a group, putting pieces of the puzzle into place
 9 systematically, and I like to call it like a choreography,
 10 so that it's built in a timely fashion, allowing people
 11 to -- you know, an avenue of exit and then if there's
 12 noncompliance, that final piece comes into place and then
 13 there's enforcement action taken.

14 **Q.** You mentioned there that dispersal on its own was not
 15 always effective. Is that a lesson that Minnesota State
 16 Patrol was learning on the ground in Minneapolis in May of
 17 2020?

18 **A.** Yes, we were.

19 **Q.** Are mass arrests common?

20 **A.** Previously, no. Over the last 18 months it has been
 21 more common based on the environment that we're working
 22 through.

23 **Q.** Now, you mentioned that you attempted to do a mass
 24 arrest. Where did that -- where was that occurring?

25 **A.** After navigating through the city streets, in the area

221

1 of Lake and Grand there was a large crowd of demonstrators.
 2 There was actually a fire built within the middle of that
 3 intersection. And based on reports, aerial with the use of
 4 a helicopter or otherwise monitoring different entities of
 5 this crowd, we were able to set up a larger perimeter blocks
 6 out and, you know, move in. Unfortunately, one of the lines
 7 broke down and a large majority of that crowd was able to
 8 escape.

9 **Q.** What about in the area of the Fifth Precinct, did
 10 Minnesota State Patrol participate in any attempt to do a
 11 mass arrest there?

12 **A.** Yes, we did.

13 **Q.** Major Dwyer, are you familiar with the Declaration of
 14 Edward Ou?

15 **A.** Yes, I am.

16 **Q.** Did I ask you to review that this morning before your
 17 testimony?

18 **A.** Yes, ma'am, you did.

19 **Q.** And did you, in fact, review it?

20 **A.** I did.

21 **Q.** And did I ask you to review the videos that he took that
 22 were attached to his declaration?

23 **A.** Yes, you did.

24 **Q.** And did you review those videos?

25 **A.** Yes, ma'am.

222

1 **Q.** So you're familiar, then, when I refer to what is
 2 Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14, which is an exhibit during the
 3 daytime which appears to be outside of the Fifth Precinct.
 4 Would you agree with me, having viewed that this morning,
 5 that it looks like that is in the area of the Fifth
 6 Precinct?

7 **A.** Yes, it is.

8 **Q.** After having watched that video again this morning, can
 9 you describe to the Court from a law enforcement perspective
 10 what was happening there.

11 **A.** So the video, as viewed, provides, you know, a very
 12 short and small window into the event that was transpiring.
 13 So there is, you know, an active line of law enforcement and
 14 they are moving down the street there. There is an
 15 encounter with Mr. Ou. And what's not seen on the video is
 16 everything, you know, in the periphery, and, again, it is a
 17 chaotic event.

18 And I think reflecting on that scene, you know, we
 19 had came up a side street adjacent to Nicollet Avenue,
 20 descended on 32nd Avenue or thereabouts. And immediately
 21 upon, you know, forming the line formation on Nicollet Mall,
 22 we were met with volatility and debris thrown, from rocks,
 23 bottles, metal projectiles. There's even a report from one
 24 of our troopers seeing a machete fly through the air and
 25 land near him. There were still fires, maybe not from this

223

1 particular day, but a residual from the previous evening.

2 So it was that, again, volatile, agitated state of the
 3 crowd.

4 **Q.** And were you physically there on the ground witnessing
 5 what you just described to the Court?

6 **A.** Yes, I was.

7 **Q.** Was Minnesota State Patrol the only law enforcement
 8 agency present?

9 **A.** We were not.

10 **Q.** Can you explain from a law enforcement perspective what
 11 that line in the video, the line of law enforcement that was
 12 moving through the video, what were they attempting to do?

13 **A.** So in, again, field force operations there's some basic

14 formations, the line maybe being the easiest to implement.

15 Based on the crowd size and what we were facing,
 16 we do -- we did have multiple lines and it's what we call
 17 close support, so line formation, line formation, line
 18 formation, just a bolstering of resources so we have enough
 19 personnel to accomplish what we're trying to do.

20 But on this particular evening it was to, again,
 21 protect that area. Once we had evaluated the crowd and
 22 assessed where was the vast majority of them, we did
 23 formulate a plan, based on the curfew order, to move that
 24 crowd into the Kmart parking lot to the north near Lake
 25 Street and effect a mass arrest.

224

1 **Q.** Was a dispersal order given before that law enforcement
 2 line started to move forward?

3 **A.** In conjunction with the curfew order, there was a
 4 dispersal.

5 **Q.** What was the basis for the dispersal?

6 **A.** Being after curfew and that this was no longer a
 7 lawful -- it was after hours.

8 **Q.** Did the dispersal order apply to media, members of the
 9 media who were present in that area?

10 **A.** Yes.

11 **Q.** Why?

12 **A.** Because even though media personnel were exempt from a
 13 curfew order, based on the law enforcement operation to
 14 provide a safe perimeter and safe area to work, not only for
 15 the law enforcement personnel, but everybody in that area,
 16 it was the intent to clear the entire landscape.

17 **Q.** Why couldn't media just stay behind? Why couldn't they
 18 stay behind the law enforcement line as it was moving
 19 forward to effect the mass arrest?

20 **A.** From a law enforcement perspective, that provides a
 21 significant security risk, not only to personnel, but for
 22 their safety as well. We also house a large number of
 23 resources, tools that we need to effectively move crowds.
 24 So the best practice is that everybody stays out in front of
 25 the line and either disperses in the direction -- the

225

1 momentum, if you will, or off to the sides.
 2 **Q.** Major, I know that the unrest in Minneapolis and in
 3 St. Paul and surrounding areas lasted for several days, but
 4 in the interest of time, how did it ultimately come to an
 5 end?
 6 **A.** So there was the evening on Nicollet Mall. And then the
 7 following day there was a mass arrest at Bobby & Steve's on
 8 Washington Avenue, which took a lot of the energy out.
 9 Knowing that there was an insertion of consequences, we
 10 didn't see the same level of energy from that point on.
 11 **Q.** Major, I know that you already mentioned this, that you
 12 took photos while you were present on the ground in
 13 Minneapolis in May 2020?
 14 **A.** I did.
 15 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to publish Exhibit 41 to
 16 the witness, Your Honor?
 17 THE COURT: You may.
 18 MS. LANDRUM: Shirley, if you could -- Ms. Kosek,
 19 if you could pull it up.
 20 BY MS. LANDRUM:
 21 **Q.** Major, this is a compilation of 25 photos. If Ms. Kosek
 22 can just move through them one at a time for you to identify
 23 them as being the photos that you, in fact, took.
 24 (Witness reviews exhibit)
 25 **A.** Yes.

226

1 **Q.** Major, are those accurate copies of some of the
 2 photographs that you took in May of 2020?
 3 **A.** Yes, they are.
 4 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, state defendants move to
 5 admit Exhibit 41.
 6 MR. RIACH: No objection.
 7 THE COURT: Exhibit 41 is received.
 8 MS. LANDRUM: And, Your Honor, I see that it is
 9 3:29. I'm about to transition. We certainly could talk
 10 about some of these photos, but I am wondering if now is a
 11 time to stop for the day.
 12 THE COURT: Let me confer with my staff. I think
 13 we probably can continue the hearing --
 14 MS. LANDRUM: Wonderful.
 15 THE COURT: -- but I do need to at this point get
 16 a better understanding of how much more time we would need
 17 to determine whether it makes sense to continue it today or
 18 whether we need to also schedule another day for the
 19 hearing.
 20 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you.
 21 THE COURT: So can you tell me in your estimation
 22 what more the hearing would entail?
 23 MS. LANDRUM: I would guess for this, ideally
 24 another half hour to 45 minutes.
 25 THE COURT: Okay. And that's simply for direct,

228

1 **A.** I had not.
 2 **Q.** Can you explain to the Court what made it different.
 3 **A.** Really was an unprecedented event, navigating through,
 4 like, the night after night after night after night of
 5 riotous behavior.
 6 I always revert back to this one reflection or
 7 memory, and it was the Friday evening into the early morning
 8 hours of Saturday. From a supervisory standpoint, the
 9 things that we asked our troopers to do were like no other.
 10 So we were in a, like, western direction in the
 11 area of 31st and Blaisdell, and there's a high-rise
 12 apartment behind us. And knowing some of the background
 13 and, like, attacks on law enforcement, that was on our
 14 minds. We were already met with violence, debris being
 15 thrown out at us.
 16 There's fires within the street, and our troopers
 17 were progressing down the street. We would have them go up
 18 to the fire, try to engage these violent actors. We'd put
 19 out the fire as best as we could with the fire extinguishers
 20 that we would have, but it wasn't totally extinguished. We
 21 would ask them to walk through the fire up to the next fire
 22 to engage the crowd.
 23 And then ultimately on that evening there was an
 24 unattended vehicle that was -- with a brick on the
 25 accelerator that was placed in our direction or trajectory

	229		231
1 towards our line of troopers. So really that threat of 2 vehicle assault also was something that we hadn't 3 encountered to that degree ever, and that was a nightly 4 occurrence. 5 Q. Taking a step back, in your 22 years of experience, 6 Major, prior to this time did you have experience in crowd 7 control? 8 A. Yes, I do. 9 Q. Can you describe that to the Court. 10 A. So I've been involved in field force operations since 11 2008 prior to the Republican National Convention. And since 12 that time I've been a member of our Field Force Team, which 13 is now our Mobile Response Team. But I've attended all the 14 training and have led the training, but I also hold some 15 credentialing on a federal level with the Center For 16 Domestic Preparedness and instruct for them in field force 17 operations. 18 Q. So it sounds like you actually have a lot of experience 19 in crowd control? 20 A. Yes, ma'am. 21 Q. Okay. On the ground in Minneapolis in 2020, was 22 Minneapolis State Patrol -- or Minnesota State Patrol ever 23 called to use any type of force, such as less lethal 24 munitions or chemicals? 25 A. So we did employ riot control tools.		1 Q. What is it? 2 A. That is our General Order on use of force. 3 Q. And Ms. Kosek has just flipped through the pages. Does 4 this appear to be an accurate copy of Minnesota State 5 Patrol's use of force policy? 6 A. It does. 7 Q. If a trooper were to violate this policy, would they be 8 subject to discipline? 9 A. Yes, ma'am. 10 Q. Now I would like to talk to you about what Minnesota 11 State Patrol did immediately after the May into June 2020 12 unrest subsided. From a high level, what lessons did 13 Minnesota State Patrol learn when it comes to the treatment 14 of media? 15 A. So there's tactics or there are procedures that we have 16 implemented. We've always had an outstanding relationship 17 and held that in high regard and want to continue that. So 18 from a documentation standpoint, we invested into certain 19 tools. We made ourself what we would say readily 20 identifiable in the interest of transparency, that if there 21 was an issue, that it could be identified that that indeed 22 was a state trooper that was involved. And some of those 23 tools, specifically we invested in the Intrepid app and 24 Salamander application just for better oversight of our 25 operations.	
	230		232
1 Q. Can you describe for the Court what types of tools were 2 used. 3 A. So there's a variety, but actually through the course of 4 evaluation, we've actually limited our inventory. So there 5 may be blast balls that are inert. There may be some that 6 carry a payload or other dispensaries. There are chemical 7 agents as well that we use, specifically CS gas, along with 8 direct impact. And then every trooper on their belt carries 9 pepper spray, but also there are larger canisters that are 10 used. 11 Q. Has the Minnesota State Patrol ever utilized rubber 12 bullets? 13 A. We do not. 14 Q. Would any of those agents be utilized without first 15 giving an opportunity to disperse? 16 A. They would not. 17 Q. Does Minnesota State Patrol have any policies or 18 procedures pertaining to the use of force? 19 A. We have a specific use of force policy. 20 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to publish Exhibit 10 to 21 the witness, Your Honor? 22 THE COURT: You may. 23 BY MS. LANDRUM: 24 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 10? 25 A. I do.		1 Q. And specifically what do those tools, Intrepid and 2 Salamander, do for State Patrol? 3 A. Basically provide tracking of not only personnel, but, 4 like, the Intrepid application allows real-time 5 documentation in the field, so as commanders or whoever is 6 logging information, that is stored on a server or web base 7 and it can be monitored virtually real time by supervisory 8 or command staff and there's input that can be given related 9 to the events. 10 Q. And I think you mentioned about Minnesota State Patrol 11 being more identifiable. Can you just explain that to the 12 Court to make sure we understand what you mean by that. 13 A. Through the course or the aftermath of events in 14 Minneapolis, there were several events that were brought to 15 our attention and every time it was always State Patrol, 16 State Patrol, State Patrol. 17 So on the front chest protector or the front panel 18 of our chest protector, there's an identifier. Previously 19 it just used to be one row of text. As we tried to identify 20 individuals in like a Twitter video or grainy quality videos 21 that are posted in a myriad of places, it became apparent 22 that, like, if it said, "Sheriffs" or "Police Officer" -- 23 there was only one during this event that really stood out 24 and that was our partners from the DNR. They had two rows 25 of text, "Conservation Officer." So in an effort to just	

	233	
1	make us readily identifiable, we went with a state	1 everybody. And so there are people that, you know, come to
2	silhouette with a bright white background and then it says,	2 the event out of curiosity, there are individuals that come
3	"State Trooper" on it and it's approximately eight inches by	3 to the event to cause harm or damage or create chaos, and
4	four inches wide.	4 then there are media individuals that are there to cover the
5	Q. And is that because Minnesota State Patrol wanted to be	5 events and report on that. So to have that amount of people
6	easily and readily identified as Minnesota State Patrol?	6 in a very small footprint, it's very challenging to identify
7	A. Without a doubt.	7 which person is affiliated with which group.
8	Q. And just to clarify the testimony that you just gave, in	8 Q. Can you explain that to the Court, why that is. Because
9	May -- for purposes of May 2020, I think you said it	9 we have heard testimony today from individuals claiming that
10	was Patrol, it was Patrol, it was Patrol. Did you mean	10 they were easily and readily identifiable as media. Can you
11	there that other officers were being confused for Minnesota	11 explain from your perspective how that occurs in the field.
12	State Patrol?	12 A. As far as trouble in identifying?
13	A. That is correct.	13 Q. Being able to identify who is or is not media.
14	Q. I would like to move to a discussion of Operation Safety	14 A. Certainly. So what we saw in Brooklyn Center and
15	Net, which the Court has already heard about. But are you	15 Minneapolis, there's, let's say, kind of a covert or trying
16	familiar with Operation Safety Net?	16 to blend in with the crowd that perhaps media is engaged in.
17	A. I am.	17 Because we have seen that when media is identified
18	Q. Are you aware of any steps Operation Safety Net took to	18 by certain groups of demonstrators, protesters, that they
19	plan for the presence of media for purposes of the Derek	19 aren't always accepted kindly and that they direct action
20	Chauvin trial?	20 towards some of these reporters based on, you know, certain
21	A. I am. There were different platforms of outreach to	21 stories that they've provided or direction or, you know,
22	make contact with our media partners, different forums. I	22 something portrayed in the news. So we've actually had to
23	participated in one that was best practices if media	23 separate reporters from bad actors in the past.
24	encountered law enforcement. And then also I know that	24 And then on the other side, it provides a tool for
25	there was an initiative to move towards a standardized press	25 demonstrators. Those that would like to engage in criminal
	234	
1	credential.	1 activity or riotous behavior, it provides them almost like a
2	Q. You mentioned that you participated in something	2 cloak of, again, blending in, not anonymity, but they are
3	pertaining to best practices. Best practices as to what?	3 portraying themselves as media personnel so that they are,
4	A. As far as if there is interaction on the media side with	4 you know, in this hands-off type environment, knowing the
5	our partners in law enforcement, of how to navigate safely	5 particulars of how we treat media and wanting to uphold the
6	through these very tumultuous and unpredictable events.	6 Constitution and freedom of press.
7	Q. And you mentioned the discussion of a press credential.	7 Q. So you mentioned two concerns there with regard to the
8	Can you explain that further to the Court.	8 identification of media, one possibly being a safety issue
9	A. So in the interest of -- much like our front panel chest	9 for the media coming from persons intending to do harm in
10	protector to make us readily identifiable, if there was one	10 the field. Did I hear that correctly?
11	standardized press pass or credential, it would serve the	11 A. Yes, that is correct.
12	same purpose. So looking at it, you would be able to	12 Q. Have you seen that yourself in the field?
13	identify that individual as press. Even if they were	13 A. Yes.
14	standing side by side with somebody active in the crowd or	14 Q. Did you see that in Brooklyn Center?
15	an agitator, a bad actor, there would be that discernible	15 A. There were instances of that in Brooklyn Center. We've
16	markings to allow us to make sure the correct action was	16 seen it at the Capitol. We've seen it in other venues.
17	taken.	17 Q. And then you also mentioned that another concern is that
18	Q. In your law enforcement experience, do members of the	18 individuals might claim to be press who aren't, in fact,
19	media sometimes get so close as to be side by side with	19 press. Did I hear that right?
20	agitators or other members within a crowd situation?	20 A. Yes, that is correct.
21	A. In recent events I've seen that frequently.	21 Q. Is that something that you've actually seen in the
22	Q. From a law enforcement perspective, why would it be	22 field?
23	important for you to be able to clearly identify who is or	23 A. Yes.
24	is not media visually?	24 Q. And did you see that in Brooklyn Center?
25	A. So in a crowd dynamic, there is this intermixture of	25 A. Yes, we did.

	237		239
1	Q. And were some of those instances documented?	1	Q. Did Minnesota State Patrol incur any injuries as a result?
2	A. They were.	2	A. We did have troopers that were injured.
3	Q. Okay. Because that's active criminal investigative	3	Q. How did this unrest in Brooklyn Center, and I think you
4	data, I won't be asking specific questions about those.	4	touched upon this a little bit, but how did it compare as a
5	So let's just take a step back, then. We started	5	whole to what you experienced in May 2020?
6	bleeding into Brooklyn Center. Taking a high level, did	6	A. So it really contributed to -- a difference was the
7	Minnesota State Patrol have involvement in responding to	7	smaller footprint. In Minneapolis it was spread out, you
8	Brooklyn Center?	8	know, through a large sector or various sectors of the city.
9	A. Yes, we did.	9	In Brooklyn Center, it was confined to the area directly in
10	Q. How did Minnesota State Patrol become involved?	10	front of the Brooklyn Center Police Department, specifically
11	A. Again, much like the events of Minneapolis, in the death	11	that Humboldt Avenue area and just that north-south
12	of Daunte Wright we were asked to provide additional	12	corridor, and those week's events transpired in that very
13	services or resources to the city as their resources were	13	small footprint. So there is a small, like, commercial
14	not adequate to respond to the event.	14	sector, but also there is a larger residential footprint as
15	Q. And who made that request?	15	well.
16	A. That would have been the City of Brooklyn Center.	16	Q. And when did Minnesota State Patrol -- or how long was
17	Q. Was Minnesota State Patrol the only other law	17	Minnesota State Patrol on the ground in Brooklyn Center?
18	enforcement agency that came to aid Brooklyn Center?	18	A. For a period of a week.
19	A. They were not.	19	Q. Can you describe for the Court from a high level what
20	Q. Who else responded?	20	the law enforcement response to that was. What did law
21	A. So there was a variety of metro or suburban departments.	21	enforcement do in response to the unrest they were seeing?
22	West Metro Command, they were there, the Hennepin County	22	A. Certainly. So we worked cooperatively, collaboratively
23	Sheriff's Office. A variety of departments.	23	with our law enforcement partners of those various
24	Q. Was Minnesota State Patrol in charge of the law	24	jurisdictions to quell the unrest.
25	enforcement response that occurred in Brooklyn Center in		
	238		240
1	April 2021?	1	Q. And how did you do that?
2	A. No, we weren't.	2	A. So there were evenings that we would try to effect,
3	Q. Was Minnesota State Patrol issuing commands to any other	3	like, the mass arrest situation. Some of those evenings
4	law enforcement agency on the ground in Brooklyn Center in	4	were successful. The very first night that we were there,
5	2021?	5	putting all the, again, puzzle pieces together, one arrest
6	A. No, we were not.	6	was effected out in front of the police department. And
7	Q. From a law enforcement perspective -- first of all,	7	then the Friday evening, that was on the other end of the
8	Major, were you on the ground in Brooklyn Center?	8	spectrum where a large mass arrest was effected.
9	A. I was.	9	Q. The Court heard a little bit of testimony today about a
10	Q. From a law enforcement perspective, what was occurring	10	fence around the Brooklyn Park -- or Brooklyn Center Police
11	on the ground there?	11	Department. Can you share, what was the law enforcement
12	A. Again, it's this chaotic environment. Initially that	12	purpose of that?
13	first day, that Sunday, a very energetic, boisterous crowd,	13	A. Really it was a de-escalation.
14	noncompliant, agitated, engaging in, you know, throwing	14	So any time that there's law enforcement
15	debris, much like what we saw in Minneapolis. But when	15	insertion, we recognize that that very well could serve as
16	dealing with this crowd, my assessment of it was even more	16	an audience at some point and there's a lot of energy
17	noncompliant than Minneapolis. The groups of individuals or	17	directed at that group of law enforcement, which we saw
18	individuals themselves were not afraid to stand, like, toe	18	there.
19	to toe with law enforcement.	19	So in an effort to remove that law enforcement
20	Q. I'm certain that you witnessed individuals there who	20	line, which was there the first night, on Monday there was a
21	were not engaging in unlawful conduct, right?	21	single fence that was erected on the front side of the
22	A. Yes.	22	Brooklyn Center Police Department.
23	Q. But so I'm hearing that there were some individuals	23	And then on a subsequent night there was a double
24	engaging in unlawful conduct?	24	layer of fence, which would allow for law enforcement to be
25	A. That is correct.	25	totally removed and at a greater distance from the crowd,

<p style="text-align: right;">241</p> <p>1 not to incite undue or unneeded energy.</p> <p>2 Q. Was that a lesson learned from May 2020, the fencing?</p> <p>3 A. Without a doubt, and that's a tactic that is still</p> <p>4 implemented in locations.</p> <p>5 Q. Did Minnesota State Patrol officers take photos of what</p> <p>6 was occurring in Brooklyn Center?</p> <p>7 A. They did.</p> <p>8 Q. And where were they housed?</p> <p>9 A. So we do have a server, a specific drive based on</p> <p>10 events, and they're kept at that location.</p> <p>11 Q. And were they also obtained through Intrepid, the new</p> <p>12 system that you just discussed?</p> <p>13 A. Yes, ma'am.</p> <p>14 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to publish Exhibit 43 to</p> <p>15 the witness, Your Honor?</p> <p>16 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>17 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>18 Q. Exhibit 43, Major, is a compilation of photos, and</p> <p>19 Ms. Kosek will cycle through them quickly. Do you recognize</p> <p>20 these as being photos taken from Brooklyn Center?</p> <p>21 A. I do.</p> <p>22 Q. And how do you know that?</p> <p>23 A. It's a depiction of various debris. Location is outside</p> <p>24 of the Brooklyn Center Police Department in the area of</p> <p>25 Humboldt Avenue.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">243</p> <p>1 safe location for you to continue your journalism.</p> <p>2 Q. And how are the dispersal orders issued?</p> <p>3 A. So we have what's called an LRAD, it's a long-range</p> <p>4 acoustical device, and they're broadcast on that device.</p> <p>5 Q. This morning did I direct you, Major, to review the</p> <p>6 videos -- we already reviewed this, but so this morning I</p> <p>7 asked you to review the videos of Edward Ou; is that</p> <p>8 correct?</p> <p>9 A. Yes, ma'am.</p> <p>10 Q. And had you seen those before?</p> <p>11 A. I have.</p> <p>12 Q. I think it's worth --</p> <p>13 MS. LANDRUM: Shirley, if you can pull up very</p> <p>14 quickly Plaintiffs' Exhibit 8, we'll play it again. It's</p> <p>15 been admitted into evidence.</p> <p>16 (Video recording played)</p> <p>17 MS. LANDRUM: Can you pause it there, Shirley.</p> <p>18 Thank you, Shirley.</p> <p>19 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>20 Q. Major, can you share with the Court from a law</p> <p>21 enforcement perspective what you're seeing in this video.</p> <p>22 A. So my assessment and recollection is there's a line of</p> <p>23 law enforcement, which would be to the south here on</p> <p>24 Humboldt Avenue. It's directly in front of the Brooklyn</p> <p>25 Center Police Department. And there are still a number of</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">242</p> <p>1 Q. And are these maintained by Minnesota State Patrol as</p> <p>2 part of their law enforcement duties?</p> <p>3 A. They are.</p> <p>4 MS. LANDRUM: The state defendants move to admit</p> <p>5 Exhibit 43 into evidence, Your Honor.</p> <p>6 MR. RIACH: No objection.</p> <p>7 THE COURT: Exhibit 43 is received in evidence.</p> <p>8 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.</p> <p>9 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>10 Q. Were dispersal orders given in Brooklyn Center, Major?</p> <p>11 A. Yes, ma'am, there were.</p> <p>12 Q. Did they apply to media?</p> <p>13 A. Yes.</p> <p>14 Q. Why?</p> <p>15 A. Much like in the city of Minneapolis, the environment</p> <p>16 was unsafe and it needed to be cleared in order to prevent</p> <p>17 the ongoing activity that was occurring.</p> <p>18 Q. Now, the Court heard testimony today that in Brooklyn</p> <p>19 Center the dispersal orders specifically mentioned the</p> <p>20 media. Can you explain why.</p> <p>21 A. Yes. So understanding the dynamic that we navigated</p> <p>22 through in Minneapolis and wanting to make it clear to our</p> <p>23 media partners and provide like a safe environment and,</p> <p>24 like, specific instructions, like this is -- in order to</p> <p>25 continue reporting of events, we've designated an area or a</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">244</p> <p>1 individuals out in front of that law enforcement line to the</p> <p>2 north of them.</p> <p>3 Q. Now, here at this portion where Ms. Kosek has stopped</p> <p>4 the video, can you see two individuals that appear to be</p> <p>5 recording the law enforcement officers?</p> <p>6 A. I do.</p> <p>7 Q. Based on your law enforcement experience on the ground,</p> <p>8 can you determine, one way or the other, whether or not</p> <p>9 these are members of the media?</p> <p>10 A. Given this snapshot in time, no.</p> <p>11 Q. Why not?</p> <p>12 A. Like I spoke about previously, just mere attire and in</p> <p>13 an effort to blend in, but also it's just the use of cell</p> <p>14 phones or devices, cameras. This is not uncommon, for</p> <p>15 everybody to bring a cell phone or some sort of recording</p> <p>16 device to these events.</p> <p>17 Q. Now, in the shot here you can see some individuals in</p> <p>18 the street that appear to be between the law enforcement</p> <p>19 line and protesters. Can you explain to the Court, is there</p> <p>20 anything problematic with their location there?</p> <p>21 A. Yes. So the intent of the law enforcement line in this</p> <p>22 general area, in order to bring the events of this</p> <p>23 particular evening to a close safely, is to actually clear</p> <p>24 the streets.</p> <p>25 What is to the north of this location is a large</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">245</p> <p>1 strip mall parking lot, and we know that many of the 2 vehicles that -- the individuals at this event parked their 3 vehicles there. So we were trying to disperse, move that 4 crowd to the north.</p> <p>5 Q. Did you ever utilize -- not you. Did Minnesota State 6 Patrol utilize force of any kind in order to effectuate a 7 dispersal without first giving the dispersal order?</p> <p>8 A. We did not.</p> <p>9 Q. In Brooklyn Center did you ever personally witness a 10 trooper intentionally targeting a member of the media with a 11 use of force or arrest?</p> <p>12 A. I did not.</p> <p>13 MS. LANDRUM: I would like to show now, Your 14 Honor, Exhibit 29 for demonstrative purposes only. This is 15 a video that this witness did not take. Would that be --</p> <p>16 THE COURT: Are there any objections?</p> <p>17 MR. RIACH: No objection, Your Honor.</p> <p>18 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>19 (Video recording played)</p> <p>20 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>21 Q. Can you see this video, Major?</p> <p>22 A. Yes, I can.</p> <p>23 Q. Can you just describe for the Court -- do you have any 24 recognition of what you're seeing here?</p> <p>25 A. Yeah. So this is the very commercial area that I spoke</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">247</p> <p>1 that occurred in Brooklyn Center?</p> <p>2 A. We did.</p> <p>3 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to show to the witness 4 Exhibit 21, Your Honor?</p> <p>5 THE COURT: Any objection?</p> <p>6 MR. RIACH: No, Your Honor.</p> <p>7 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>8 (Video recording played)</p> <p>9 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>10 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 21?</p> <p>11 A. I do, yep. That's consistent with the crowds that we 12 would see over the course of the days.</p> <p>13 MS. LANDRUM: Can you play it again.</p> <p>14 (Video recording played)</p> <p>15 THE WITNESS: There is a law enforcement 16 contingent to the forefront, and then also just a large mass 17 of people beyond that.</p> <p>18 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>19 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of the video 20 Minnesota State Patrol took in Brooklyn Center in April 21 2021?</p> <p>22 A. It is.</p> <p>23 MS. LANDRUM: State defendants move to admit 24 Exhibit 21, Your Honor.</p> <p>25 MR. RIACH: No objection.</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">246</p> <p>1 to, the strip mall just to the north of the Brooklyn Center 2 Police Department.</p> <p>3 Q. And what was occurring at this area at the time?</p> <p>4 MS. LANDRUM: Could you play it again, Ms. Kosek.</p> <p>5 (Video recording played)</p> <p>6 THE WITNESS: So those behaviors that we've seen 7 at previous riots, the looting, the damage to property, the 8 Dollar Tree was subject to arson and the individuals, you 9 know, capturing that.</p> <p>10 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>11 Q. From your perspective as a law enforcement official on 12 the ground, would you identify all these people as being 13 members of -- journalists or members of the media?</p> <p>14 A. Given that snippet of video, it's very hard to discern 15 who is media and who is general public.</p> <p>16 MS. LANDRUM: If you could play it again, 17 Ms. Kosek.</p> <p>18 (Video recording played)</p> <p>19 MS. LANDRUM: You can turn the volume down or off.</p> <p>20 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>21 Q. Given what was occurring here, the looting, as you 22 mentioned, is it appropriate for people to be in this area?</p> <p>23 A. So this also would be unsafe, and this area needs to be 24 cleared to prevent further criminal activity.</p> <p>25 Q. Did Minnesota State Patrol take any videos of the unrest</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">248</p> <p>1 THE COURT: Exhibit 21 is received.</p> <p>2 MS. LANDRUM: And if we could play it again,</p> <p>3 Ms. Kosek.</p> <p>4 (Video recording played)</p> <p>5 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>6 Q. There's a moment here in this video where you see a 7 bright light flashing, right there (indicating). Can you 8 describe for the Court what that is.</p> <p>9 A. So at many of these events the crowd, members of the 10 crowd or a member of the crowd, will use distractionary 11 devices. So this very well could be like a high-intensity 12 light that is pointed towards law enforcement. Otherwise, 13 you know, it's not out of the realm of possibility for laser 14 light to be used.</p> <p>15 MS. LANDRUM: Permission to present to the witness 16 Exhibit 22?</p> <p>17 THE COURT: You may.</p> <p>18 (Video recording played)</p> <p>19 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>20 Q. Major, do you recognize Exhibit 22?</p> <p>21 A. I do.</p> <p>22 Q. What is it?</p> <p>23 A. So that's a scene from Brooklyn Center outside the 24 residential area in the area of 6700 Humboldt and the crowd 25 in that area.</p>

<p style="text-align: right;">249</p> <p>1 Q. Is this a video that Minnesota State Patrol took? 2 A. It is. 3 Q. Does this appear to be an accurate copy of the video 4 Minnesota State Patrol took in Brooklyn Center in April 5 2021? 6 A. Yes.</p> <p>7 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, the state defendants 8 move to admit Exhibit 22.</p> <p>9 MR. RIACH: No objection.</p> <p>10 THE COURT: It is received.</p> <p>11 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>12 Q. Now, we'll probably have Ms. Kosek play it a couple 13 times and you could just maybe provide a narrative for us, 14 what all we're seeing here on the ground and sort of from 15 the law enforcement perspective the importance of it.</p> <p>16 Maybe we could talk about the umbrellas first.</p> <p>17 What's happening there with the umbrellas?</p> <p>18 A. So that's not out of the realm of normal at these 19 events. We've seen it across the nation and now we've seen 20 it in Minnesota. But they are used to mask, like, the next 21 intentional move, to provide concealment, whether it is to 22 compile debris to be thrown or talk about strategy, like the 23 next move that they're going to implement, but really the 24 biggest fear is some type of weaponry directed at law 25 enforcement.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">251</p> <p>1 Q. Given the dispersal order, is that a lawful place for 2 them to be? 3 A. It is not. 4 Q. And from your perspective as a law enforcement official, 5 the individuals that you can see here, some of whom on the 6 sides are recording, would you consider them to be media or 7 would you be able to identify them as media? 8 A. Given the information that I have here, again, it's hard 9 to discern who is affiliated with media or who is a member 10 of the public.</p> <p>11 Q. I want to turn to the evening of Friday, April 16th, and 12 I think that you mentioned that that was the night where 13 there was the largest mass arrest. Did I hear that right? 14 A. Yes, ma'am.</p> <p>15 Q. Was a dispersal order given that day? 16 A. It was.</p> <p>17 Q. Who gave it? 18 A. A member of the law enforcement. I don't recall if it 19 was the State Patrol.</p> <p>20 Q. The Court heard testimony today from a witness that was 21 present who believed that perhaps a dispersal order was not 22 given. What's your reaction to that? 23 A. So I know that a dispersal order was given and it very 24 well could have been using our LRAD system, but considering 25 it wasn't our primary authority, that we were assisting, it</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">250</p> <p>1 Q. At this point in the evening, would a dispersal order 2 already have been issued? 3 A. Yes, it would have. 4 Q. Now, I have seen periodically what looks like objects 5 being thrown towards law enforcement. Am I seeing that 6 right? 7 A. Yes, you are.</p> <p>8 MS. LANDRUM: If you could play it again, 9 Ms. Kosek. Thank you.</p> <p>10 (Video recording played)</p> <p>11 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>12 Q. I also notice this really bright light here kind of in 13 the bottom left quadrant. What's that? 14 A. So this individual driving this vehicle was present on 15 most nights in the area and, again, that's a distractionary 16 device. It affects the visibility of our troopers and 17 causes distraction.</p> <p>18 MS. LANDRUM: If we can pause it here, Ms. Kosek.</p> <p>19 BY MS. LANDRUM:</p> <p>20 Q. So you can see here that an individual is just running 21 across the line of protesters, and then there's another 22 individual standing there with what looks like a GoPro. 23 From a law enforcement perspective, is that a safe place for 24 those individuals to be? 25 A. Under the current conditions, no.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">252</p> <p>1 would have defaulted to either the Hennepin County Sheriff's 2 Office or one of the other departments assisting.</p> <p>3 Q. Would Minnesota State Patrol ever effectuate a mass 4 arrest without first issuing a dispersal? 5 A. We would not.</p> <p>6 Q. Can you explain to the Court what was happening that 7 Friday night before the dispersal order was given. 8 A. Much like some of the previous evenings, there was a 9 large congregation of a crowd. It was volatile. It was 10 violent at times. The projectiles, the debris, a lot of 11 this was directed at the Brooklyn Center Police Department 12 even though the law enforcement contingent was removed from 13 the direct fence area and up towards the building, but there 14 were reports of, again, large items of debris, paint being 15 used. And really what precipitated or the, I guess, flash 16 point, if you will, for the mass arrest was individuals 17 trying to breach the first fence that was erected.</p> <p>18 Q. The Court also heard testimony today from a member of 19 the media who was photographed on that Friday, April 16th, 20 and this is actually the testimony of Christopher -- now I 21 forget and I'm going to mispronounce his last name -- 22 T-u-i-t-e. Are you familiar with his testimony via his 23 declaration and videos? 24 A. I have reviewed the declaration and videos. 25 Q. Because I asked you to do that this morning?</p>

253

1 **A.** Yes, ma'am.
 2 **Q.** Can you describe for the Court what Minnesota State
 3 Patrol was attempting to do in photographing members of the
 4 media on Friday, April 16th.
 5 **A.** Certainly. So there was no ill intent by photographing
 6 individuals or press credentials. It was really in an
 7 effort to expedite the process to be able to log the
 8 information and either confirm at a later time or have
 9 documentation that we did indeed have contact with these
 10 individuals, so there wasn't, you know, reports of
 11 wrongdoing afterwards.
 12 **Q.** What was the purpose in the first place? Why was there
 13 a need to identify who these individuals were?
 14 **A.** So it's our standard protocol that everybody, like,
 15 within a containment or that mass arrest situation, that
 16 we're identifying all those individuals. It's part of our
 17 enforcement or arrest process. Through the use of Intrepid
 18 everybody has their photograph taken, a trooper will enter
 19 individual notes, and then either they're released after
 20 determining, you know, proper affiliation or they're
 21 escorted to, you know, the enforcement line.
 22 **Q.** So those individuals who were photographed, they had
 23 been caught -- they had been encircled in a mass arrest; is
 24 that right?
 25 **A.** Yes, ma'am.

254

1 **Q.** And had a dispersal order already been granted by that
 2 time -- or had a dispersal order already been issued at that
 3 time?
 4 **A.** That is correct.
 5 **Q.** And did members of the media know that it applied to
 6 them?
 7 **A.** It is my belief that the dispersal order -- they should
 8 have known, yes.
 9 **Q.** So those individuals being photographed, were they not
 10 members of the media, were they otherwise subject to arrest?
 11 **A.** Yes, they would be.
 12 **Q.** Why?
 13 **A.** Because they were still present at the scene after
 14 direct information was given them to leave the scene.
 15 **Q.** We heard testimony today from a photographer who had
 16 refused to leave a mass arrest encirclement. From a law
 17 enforcement perspective, what is the problem with members of
 18 the media remaining in an encircled area where a mass arrest
 19 is being conducted?
 20 **A.** Really it complicates the entire process from an
 21 efficiency standpoint, but also, again, as I previously
 22 spoke to, it's this intermixing of people from different
 23 affiliations, media, the public. So trying to navigate
 24 through that is troublesome.
 25 **Q.** Are there any safety issues presented by a member of the

1 media maintaining their presence within an encirclement?
 2 **A.** Without a doubt. So even though that -- it's relatively
 3 stabilized, it's still unpredictable within that
 4 environment. It's not uncommon for individuals to still
 5 resist law enforcement in that environment. So the process
 6 of mass arrest is to form this encirclement, but then to
 7 send controlled teams to effect an arrest and extract
 8 individuals from the inside.
 9 **Q.** When Minnesota State Patrol troopers were directing
 10 members of the media to remove themselves from the mass
 11 arrest encirclement, did they do that for the purpose of
 12 preventing them from doing their jobs as reporters?
 13 **A.** No, ma'am.
 14 **Q.** Why did they do it, then?
 15 **A.** It was really in an effort to remove them from the
 16 unsafe environment and to provide them with an area to
 17 continue their reporting in a safe area.
 18 **Q.** Well, could they continue that reporting just
 19 immediately outside the encirclement area?
 20 **A.** We did allow that.
 21 **Q.** And so talk to me about that. With regard -- you
 22 mentioned providing a safe area. Is that something that was
 23 happening in Brooklyn Center?
 24 **A.** Every evening, yes.
 25 **Q.** Can you describe that to the Court.

256

1 **A.** So even in one of our dispersal orders we had given
 2 direction to go to a certain location because it was deemed
 3 safe. And we're at a little bit of an advantage because we
 4 know our next move, and there were times where myself or
 5 other commanders would have conversations with members of
 6 the media, telling them that we're going to start effecting
 7 arrests here and that this will be, you know, a safe
 8 location for you, and those, obviously, were the ones that
 9 were clearly identifiable with what we deemed, you know,
 10 like mainstream credentialing. And then there were other
 11 times where they had to be extracted from that inside and
 12 then a location was identified where they can continue their
 13 coverage.
 14 **Q.** Is that a standard practice for Minnesota State Patrol,
 15 to try to provide a safe area where media can continue their
 16 coverage if they're located in an area that's not safe?
 17 **A.** It is. It's something that we've been doing for a
 18 number of years. Also, like, at the State Capitol, that's
 19 really where we've had the most exposure prior to
 20 Minneapolis and Brooklyn Center, but there are times that we
 21 are having conversations with our media partners and telling
 22 them that maybe the best area is not right on top of the
 23 demonstration. So we will point out several locations. It
 24 might be across the street with elevation. It might be at a
 25 different vantage point. But I think a lot of media

257

1 relations partners are trying to, like, capture from the
 2 best vantage point to tell the story.
 3 **Q.** Major Dwyer, did you personally have any other direct
 4 experiences with members of the media on the ground in
 5 Brooklyn Center?
 6 **A.** Yes, I did.
 7 **Q.** Can you describe for the Court what that experience was.
 8 **A.** So there were multiple occasions where I would go out in
 9 front of our line of troopers, so I was in between law
 10 enforcement and the members of the crowd, but I would
 11 initiate conversations with the media and let them know,
 12 like, where safe locations were.

13 If they were in the middle of a mass arrest
 14 situation, I would make contact with those, have the
 15 troopers identify them, try to verify their credentialing,
 16 and then as soon as possible, as soon as feasible, we would,
 17 like, escort them out of that inner circle. And then there
 18 was an incident where I did intervene to prevent an arrest
 19 of a media partner.

20 **Q.** Can you describe that intervention for the Court.
 21 **A.** So it was on the evening of that Friday. Another allied
 22 agency -- so the encirclement had occurred. A member of the
 23 media was trying to get back to his vehicle. He was
 24 directed by a member of the allied agency to go around the
 25 other side of the building. There was noncompliance by the

258

1 individual from the media. He wanted to go around what he
 2 thought was the most efficient travel to his vehicle. He
 3 was directed again to go around the opposite side of the
 4 building. Again there was noncompliance. At that time the
 5 allied agency informed him that he was under arrest.

6 Having some experience and additional knowledge
 7 about relationships of media and wanting to provide that
 8 freedom of press, I intervened and said that I'll handle
 9 this situation, despite putting me in an awkward situation
 10 with a member of law enforcement, but then escorting him
 11 around the building and to a safe location where he could
 12 exit the encirclement.

13 **Q.** Given the chaos that was happening at that time, why did
 14 you choose to intervene?

15 **A.** It's the right thing to do. It's the -- not
 16 everybody -- not every department possesses the same level
 17 of knowledge in what I like to call the care and handling of
 18 our media to ensure that their best interests are upheld.

19 **Q.** Thank you, Major. I have no further questions.

20 **A.** Thank you.

21 THE COURT: Cross examination?

22 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

23 THE COURT: You're welcome.

24

25

259

1 CROSS EXAMINATION
 2 BY MR. RIACH:
 3 **Q.** Good afternoon, Major. My name is Kevin Riach. I'm an
 4 attorney with the plaintiffs in this case. Okay?
 5 **A.** Good afternoon, sir.
 6 **Q.** Just as a preliminary matter, you are Major Dwyer now,
 7 correct?
 8 **A.** That is correct.
 9 **Q.** And during the George Floyd protests, you were a captain
 10 at that time; am I correct?
 11 **A.** That is correct, sir.
 12 **Q.** So you were promoted between the George Floyd protests
 13 and today, correct?
 14 **A.** That is correct.
 15 **Q.** When were you promoted?
 16 **A.** June 3rd of 2021.
 17 **Q.** Okay. There was a purge of records at the State Patrol
 18 immediately after the George Floyd protests; is that
 19 correct?
 20 **A.** So there was a purge of e-mails and text messages,
 21 correct.
 22 **Q.** All right. What date was it that those materials were
 23 purged?
 24 **A.** I don't have a recollection, sir.
 25 **Q.** It was immediately after the George Floyd protests,

260

1 though, correct?
 2 **A.** That is correct.
 3 **Q.** Was it before you demobilized on June 7th?
 4 **A.** It was not.
 5 **Q.** Okay. It was after June 7th?
 6 **A.** I believe so, yes.
 7 **Q.** And the purge included e-mail correspondence, correct?
 8 **A.** Correct.
 9 **Q.** And text messages?
 10 **A.** Yes, sir.
 11 **Q.** Were any paper documents purged?
 12 **A.** They were not.
 13 **Q.** What other electronic records were purged?
 14 **A.** To my knowledge, none.
 15 **Q.** And who ordered that those records be purged?
 16 **A.** There's no order. It's really a standard practice over
 17 the course of time that we remove, you know, delete text
 18 messages, delete e-mail messages.
 19 **Q.** And the text messages and e-mail messages that were
 20 deleted, did that include any text messages and e-mail
 21 messages sent during the George Floyd protests?
 22 **A.** It was all e-mails and texts.
 23 **Q.** Were any electronic reports that had been created during
 24 the George Floyd protests destroyed?
 25 **A.** They were not.

<p>1 Q. And you said this is just an automatic purge that 2 happened?</p> <p>3 A. Periodically, correct.</p> <p>4 Q. How often does that happen?</p> <p>5 A. There's no set occurrence to it, it varies from person 6 to person, but it is a recommended practice.</p> <p>7 Q. Was this a state -- was this throughout the State Patrol 8 that records were destroyed?</p> <p>9 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, lack of personal 10 knowledge, calls for speculation.</p> <p>11 THE COURT: I don't understand your response. You 12 said it was person to person?</p> <p>13 THE WITNESS: So it varies person to person, Your 14 Honor. So one individual may purge documents on the 1st of 15 every month or, you know, remove them from their e-mail 16 server. Another person may do it on the 15th. There is no 17 set practice delineating this. It varies individually.</p> <p>18 THE COURT: But it's automatic?</p> <p>19 THE WITNESS: No. It is an act where individuals 20 delete their e-mail basket and then go into another layer of 21 the deleted folders and then remove from that server.</p> <p>22 MR. RIACH: May I inquire, Your Honor?</p> <p>23 THE COURT: Please.</p> <p>24 BY MR. RIACH:</p> <p>25 Q. So help me understand this, Major. Was this something</p>	<p>261</p> <p>1 particular instance, though, most of the State Patrol 2 deleted at the same time?</p> <p>3 A. No. It would have been, you know, following 4 according -- I can't speak to how everybody deleted their 5 e-mails.</p> <p>6 Q. What was your historic practice for deleting and 7 destroying your e-mails?</p> <p>8 A. Periodically. You know, I don't have a set time of the 9 month. It's just periodically.</p> <p>10 Q. Now, are there any record retention policies employed by 11 the State Patrol?</p> <p>12 A. There are. We do have a retention schedule.</p> <p>13 Q. What's your retention schedule?</p> <p>14 A. Related to?</p> <p>15 Q. To e-mail correspondence. Are you required to keep 16 e-mail correspondence for a certain period of time?</p> <p>17 A. We are not.</p> <p>18 Q. You can delete your e-mails any time you want?</p> <p>19 A. That is correct.</p> <p>20 Q. What about text messages, are you required to keep your 21 text messages for any period of time?</p> <p>22 A. We are not.</p> <p>23 Q. You can delete those any time you want?</p> <p>24 A. That is correct.</p> <p>25 Q. All right. And you just decided, shortly after the</p>
<p>1 you did with your own records; is that correct?</p> <p>2 A. It was common practice through the agency, not just my 3 records.</p> <p>4 Q. Okay. Let's start with you. Okay? You purged your 5 records sometime immediately after the George Floyd 6 protests, correct?</p> <p>7 A. I deleted my e-mails and text messages, correct.</p> <p>8 Q. All right. Do you know of anyone else who deleted their 9 e-mails and text messages immediately after the George Floyd 10 protests?</p> <p>11 A. Yes, I do.</p> <p>12 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, calls for speculation, 13 lack of personal knowledge.</p> <p>14 THE COURT: It does not. You may answer the 15 question "do you know."</p> <p>16 THE WITNESS: Yes, ma'am.</p> <p>17 THE COURT: You may proceed with your questioning.</p> <p>18 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.</p> <p>19 BY MR. RIACH:</p> <p>20 Q. Who else deleted their e-mails and text messages?</p> <p>21 A. So I will, I guess, offer speculation. I don't -- 22 didn't actually see them delete them, but I do believe a 23 vast majority of the agency.</p> <p>24 Q. So normal practice was kind of person to person, a 25 person might do this just to clear out their inbox. In this</p>	<p>262</p> <p>1 George Floyd protests, this would be a good time to clean 2 out my inbox?</p> <p>3 A. It is consistent with events, large-scale or otherwise, 4 we periodically delete our inboxes.</p> <p>5 Q. So after a large-scale event, mass unrest, it's your 6 practice to delete all your e-mails?</p> <p>7 A. I periodically delete my e-mails.</p> <p>8 Q. Were any of the records that you deleted reviewed to 9 determine if they had any bearing on this case?</p> <p>10 A. Other than myself?</p> <p>11 Q. Did anyone review what you deleted to determine whether 12 it was relevant to this case?</p> <p>13 A. No, they did not.</p> <p>14 Q. You were aware that this case had been filed, though, at 15 the time the materials were deleted, correct?</p> <p>16 A. I was aware that there was litigation and I retained my 17 records in relation to a litigation hold.</p> <p>18 Q. When was the litigation hold placed?</p> <p>19 A. I'd have to have my memory refreshed.</p> <p>20 Q. That was after the purge, correct?</p> <p>21 A. Again, I don't remember the exact date.</p> <p>22 THE COURT: When you say you retained your 23 records, are you also including your e-mail as your records?</p> <p>24 THE WITNESS: No, ma'am. So we have, again, 25 several folders on a server. And specifically to myself and</p>

265

1 operations, any type of operational plan or anything as far
 2 as rosters or pertinent information relevant to the events,
 3 they would be kept in those folders or files. As far as
 4 generic or benign e-mails between one another or members,
 5 those are the items that are deleted.

6 BY MR. RIACH:

7 **Q.** So I want to make sure I understand you correctly. Some
 8 of your e-mails were saved?

9 **A.** No, sir.

10 **Q.** Everything you had in your inbox was destroyed shortly
 11 after the George Floyd protests?

12 **A.** So different platforms. We're talking about Outlook.
 13 So everything that's within that system, that was deleted.
 14 That doesn't mean that there's not a record of it or, you
 15 know, if there's an attachment or something relevant to the
 16 operational needs, that those are not -- those would be
 17 saved in a separate folder.

18 **Q.** And did you communicate with the other troopers that are
 19 under your command about deleting their inboxes?

20 **A.** There are reminders by district commanders and
 21 supervisory staff at various times to clean up their Outlook
 22 folders.

23 **Q.** Did you speak with any of your lieutenants about them
 24 deleting their e-mails shortly after the George Floyd
 25 protests?

266

1 **A.** I don't have a recollection, but it's not out of the
 2 realm of possibility.

3 **Q.** All right. Now, troopers were instructed at some point
 4 during the George Floyd protests that they did not need to
 5 complete use of force reports, correct?

6 **A.** That is correct.

7 **Q.** And who provided that instruction?

8 **A.** It was an assessment made by the MACC or the
 9 Multi-Agency Command Center. And given the chaotic
 10 nature -- so I should say on the first day that we were
 11 there, there wasn't any use of force. On the second day
 12 there were four individual uses of direct impact rounds, and
 13 those were captured by use of force reports.

14 After that period of time, use of force reports
 15 weren't documented given the really unprecedented chaotic
 16 environment and an inability to track the munitions used by
 17 individual members, considering the violence that was
 18 portrayed against us.

19 **Q.** So let me just make sure I'm clear here. Were troopers
 20 instructed that they didn't have to complete use of force
 21 reports or were they told do not complete use of force
 22 reports?

23 **A.** I don't recall the exact conversation. I just know that
 24 the number of instances where riot control agents were used
 25 were so vast that -- unable to document the use of force.

267

1 Also, uncharted territory or waters. Like for our agency,
 2 considering, like, we're -- typically we know the
 3 individuals engaged in force against us. So if there was an
 4 individual that was throwing debris or other objects or
 5 engaged in violence against us, in an effort to curb that,
 6 it is best practice to use like a direct marking round so
 7 that individual is marked and possibly arrested later, but
 8 there are times where they abscond and that individual isn't
 9 identified. So it would -- potentially there is the
 10 scenario where you're completing a use of force report where
 11 there's no information.

12 **Q.** Were there any use of force reports completed, to your
 13 knowledge, after the instruction was given not to fill out
 14 use of force reports?

15 **A.** So there were -- to my knowledge, no.

16 **Q.** All right. Now, you did prepare a summary report, kind
 17 of a day-by-day catalog, of the things that happened during
 18 the protests, correct?

19 **A.** I did complete a commander's report, yes.

20 **Q.** Okay. That's called a commander's report?

21 **A.** That's what I titled it, sir.

22 **Q.** And that included a summary of the events that happened
 23 on May 30th, correct?

24 **A.** Yes.

25 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I want to make sure

268

1 that I'm clear here in the use of this exhibit. Defense
 2 Exhibit 7, I believe, was a redacted version of that
 3 commander's report.

4 MS. LANDRUM: That's correct.

5 MR. RIACH: And that's something that we can
 6 display right now without clearing the courtroom; is that
 7 correct?

8 MS. LANDRUM: That's correct.

9 MR. RIACH: Okay. Ms. Anderson, can you call up
 10 Defense Exhibit 7, please.

11 BY MR. RIACH:

12 **Q.** Now, can you -- well, first of all, Major Dwyer, do you
 13 recognize this document?

14 **A.** I do.

15 **Q.** This is your commander's report, yes?

16 **A.** Yes, sir.

17 MR. RIACH: We would move admission of Defense 7.

18 MS. LANDRUM: No objection, Your Honor.

19 THE COURT: Exhibit 7 is received.

20 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Your Honor.

21 Can you scroll ahead to the third page, please,
 22 and can you pull out the second paragraph, Ms. Anderson, the
 23 second paragraph under the date May 30th. There you go.

24 BY MR. RIACH:

25 **Q.** Can you see that up there, Major?

269

1 **A.** Yes, I can, sir.
 2 **Q.** Very good. So this is a description of what happened
 3 that day that you recorded for posterity in your commander's
 4 report, correct?
 5 **A.** That is my narrative report to capture the events, yes.
 6 **Q.** Okay. You testified about the 30th of May during your
 7 direct examination by Ms. Landrum, correct?
 8 **A.** Yes, sir.
 9 **Q.** And I just want to kind of briefly run through -- I have
 10 a couple of questions about the report. Okay?
 11 **A.** Sure.
 12 **Q.** So you and your team of troopers, all the troopers that
 13 were deployed to the Fifth Precinct that day, you drove over
 14 there on some Metro Transit buses; is that correct?
 15 **A.** That is correct.
 16 **Q.** Okay. And then the buses dropped you off at the
 17 intersection of 32nd and Nicollet; is that right?
 18 **A.** That is my recollection, yes.
 19 **Q.** And then you disembarked from the buses and formed a
 20 line; is that correct?
 21 **A.** Yes.
 22 **Q.** Okay. And upon forming that line, you began to get hit
 23 with debris; is that correct?
 24 **A.** Yes.
 25 **Q.** So it says here you were taking large amounts of

270

1 projectiles, correct?
 2 **A.** Yes, sir.
 3 **Q.** And that included rocks, yes?
 4 **A.** Yes.
 5 **Q.** Bricks?
 6 **A.** Yes.
 7 **Q.** Fireworks were being thrown at you?
 8 **A.** They were being launched, yes.
 9 **Q.** Water bottles were being thrown at you?
 10 **A.** Yes.
 11 **Q.** Glass bottles were being thrown at you?
 12 **A.** Correct.
 13 **Q.** Construction debris?
 14 **A.** Yes.
 15 **Q.** When you say "construction debris," what are you talking
 16 about there?
 17 **A.** So adjacent to this area, it's in proximity to I-35,
 18 which was under construction, so I'm speculating that it
 19 came from that area. Otherwise, I guess construction debris
 20 would include, you know, landscaping or other items in that
 21 general vicinity that people would gather.
 22 **Q.** Were people throwing concrete blocks at you?
 23 **A.** Not, like, traditional concrete blocks, no.
 24 **Q.** Like chunks of concrete from construction?
 25 **A.** Yes.

271

1 **Q.** What about, like, pieces of rebar, you know, those metal
 2 bars that go in concrete, was some of that being thrown at
 3 you as well?
 4 **A.** There was metal debris, yes.
 5 **Q.** Okay. And then in response to this, to clear out that
 6 area you deployed some crowd control munitions, correct?
 7 **A.** Riot control agents, yes.
 8 **Q.** So the debris is coming in on you and you decided we
 9 need to clear these people out, let's use some crowd control
 10 munitions; is that how it played out?
 11 **A.** So there was a dispersal first.
 12 **Q.** Okay.
 13 **A.** There was crowd behavior, which included their acts --
 14 **Q.** Okay.
 15 **A.** -- a dispersal order, and then riot control agents.
 16 **Q.** Okay. So the debris is getting thrown, you fire the
 17 crowd control munitions, and then you start to move forward;
 18 is that correct?
 19 **A.** Debris, dispersal.
 20 **Q.** Okay. Debris, dispersal, munitions, and then the line
 21 moves forward?
 22 **A.** Correct.
 23 **Q.** Okay.
 24 MR. RIACH: Can you take down this exhibit,
 25 please, Ms. Anderson, and can you please bring up

272

1 Plaintiffs' Exhibit 14.
 2 BY MR. RIACH:
 3 **Q.** That's the Ed Ou video. I believe you said you reviewed
 4 this earlier today?
 5 **A.** Yes, sir.
 6 MR. RIACH: Can you just pause that at 14 seconds.
 7 You can scoot it ahead there. Can you advance maybe like a
 8 frame or two. Go one more. There we go.
 9 BY MR. RIACH:
 10 **Q.** Can you see that up there, Major Dwyer, this picture of
 11 the scene?
 12 **A.** I can.
 13 **Q.** Okay. So behind you is the buses that you were deployed
 14 from, correct?
 15 **A.** Yes.
 16 **Q.** And then this is the line you formed, right?
 17 **A.** Yes.
 18 **Q.** Okay. Now, there's no debris on the ground at this
 19 point, so this must have been before things were being
 20 thrown at you, correct?
 21 **A.** That is our initial line, yes.
 22 **Q.** All right. So do you see any debris on the ground
 23 there?
 24 **A.** Not in the forefront.
 25 **Q.** Do you see any construction debris, either behind or in

273

1 front of you?
 2 **A.** I do not.
 3 **Q.** Do you see any glass bottles on the ground?
 4 **A.** No, I don't.
 5 **Q.** Do you see any water bottles?
 6 **A.** No, sir.
 7 **Q.** Do you see any rocks?
 8 **A.** I don't.
 9 **Q.** Do you see any spent fireworks?
 10 **A.** I don't.
 11 **Q.** Okay.

12 THE COURT: Counsel, before you move, if you're
 13 planning to progress, let's just note where you are in this
 14 visual.

15 MR. RIACH: Sure. I believe we're at 25 seconds
 16 in the video, Your Honor.

17 THE COURT: Thank you.

18 BY MR. RIACH:

19 **Q.** So all that must have come flying at some point after
 20 this frame in the video, correct, Major?

21 **A.** Yes.

22 **Q.** Okay.

23 MR. RIACH: Can you go ahead and play the video,
 24 Ms. Anderson.

25 BY MR. RIACH:

274

1 **Q.** Tell us to pause the video when you see the debris start
 2 to fly.

3 (Video recording played)

4 MR. RIACH: Can you pause it there, Ms. Anderson.

5 BY MR. RIACH:

6 **Q.** Can you direct me to where the debris is located there
 7 in front of your line? Is there any debris there?

8 **A.** I don't see anything to the front there, sir.

9 THE COURT: And you are paused at what point in
 10 the video?

11 MR. RIACH: We are paused at 1 minute and
 12 10 seconds, Your Honor.

13 THE COURT: Just so counsel knows, I'm a former
 14 appellate judge --

15 MR. RIACH: I appreciate that.

16 THE COURT: -- so I am looking at the record with
 17 that lens in mind, perhaps prematurely thinking that there
 18 may be some other judges that may also be interested in this
 19 transcript. So that's the reason for me interrupting.

20 MR. RIACH: I very much appreciate it. And, quite
 21 frankly, at this point in the day, I'm not too sharp on
 22 these kinds of things, so I very much appreciate you
 23 stopping me, Judge. Thank you.

24 BY MR. RIACH:

25 **Q.** So there are munitions being fired, though, correct?

276

1 **A.** There are.

2 **Q.** So your prior testimony that you were being hit with
 3 rocks, glass bottles, water bottles, construction debris,
 4 chunks of concrete, that is not accurate, correct?

5 **A.** I wouldn't say it's inaccurate. It's not depicted on
 6 this video. So there is this period of time and I can't say
 7 that there's -- I'm not seeing anything in the foreground
 8 here on the video, but there's from 25 seconds to when the
 9 camera pans a different angle that's unaccounted for.

10 **Q.** So that was that -- when the camera panned, that was
 11 when the debris rained down on you?

12 **A.** I can't say for sure, sir. I know that there was debris
 13 being thrown. In looking at this, perhaps it didn't reach
 14 that initial line, but it's not any depiction of what's
 15 happening to the south of us -- or to the north of us,
 16 excuse me.

17 **Q.** Well, your report says you were taking large amounts of
 18 projectiles, which included rocks, bricks, fireworks, water
 19 bottles, glass bottles, and construction debris. And we
 20 just discussed in your testimony that that occurred and then
 21 the dispersal order was given and then less lethal munitions
 22 were fired. So what I'm trying to understand is: Where is
 23 the debris? Can you point out to me the debris that was
 24 landing on you?

25 **A.** I'm not going to be able to point it out on this video,

277

1 the frame?
 2 **A.** Yes, sir, I do.
 3 **Q.** Does that individual -- is there anything about that
 4 individual that suggests he might be a journalist?
 5 **A.** I see the camera.
 6 **Q.** Do you see anything on his clothing?
 7 **A.** I see on his back there may be some identifying marking,
 8 but I can't read what it says, sir.
 9 **Q.** Okay. If he had a big sign on him that said, "Press,"
 10 would that be something you would consider an indicator that
 11 he might be a journalist?
 12 **A.** That would be one element, yes.
 13 **Q.** Okay. That's one element. The fact that he's got kind
 14 of a professional-looking camera and he is taking
 15 photographs, is that another element?
 16 **A.** Yes, sir.
 17 **Q.** He's not participating in the protests, correct, or do
 18 you consider that to be participation in the protests?
 19 **A.** So there's a dispersal order that's given to this
 20 vicinity, so I would say that he's engaged in the area where
 21 riotous behavior was occurring.
 22 **Q.** Okay. What was the riotous behavior that was occurring
 23 right before you fired those munitions?
 24 **A.** And, again, it's probably outside of the shot here. My
 25 recollection is there's this riotous venue that's occurring.

278

1 MR. RIACH: Okay. Go ahead and --
 2 THE COURT: And all this testimony pertains to
 3 this exhibit at 1:22?
 4 MR. RIACH: Correct, Your Honor. Thank you.
 5 (Video recording played)
 6 MR. RIACH: You can pause it there, Ms. Anderson.
 7 BY MR. RIACH:
 8 **Q.** At this point we haven't seen any debris come flying
 9 across the screen, have we? We've paused at 1 minute and
 10 47 seconds. Have you seen any construction debris flying
 11 through the air?
 12 **A.** No, sir.
 13 MR. RIACH: You can take this exhibit down.
 14 BY MR. RIACH:
 15 **Q.** Now, you had an operational plan in place when you
 16 arrived at 32nd and Nicollet on May 30th, correct?
 17 **A.** Yes.
 18 **Q.** And the plan was to execute a mass arrest, right?
 19 **A.** That was developed, yes, upon prior knowledge of knowing
 20 that the crowd was there, realizing that the Kmart parking
 21 lot is there, yes.
 22 **Q.** But before you got there on the buses, you already
 23 planned to effectuate a mass arrest, correct?
 24 **A.** There were conversations about that based on the curfew
 25 violation, yes.

280

1 **Q.** And before you could effect that mass arrest, you had to
 2 disperse the crowd for operational purposes, correct?
 3 **A.** So they go hand in hand, you know, there's a dispersal
 4 and then there's an arrest process. They can also be
 5 separated. They can -- you can just give dispersal orders
 6 and let the crowd continue and then, as previously stated,
 7 that pushes the problem into a different area or a different
 8 day. But, yes, given what we were faced that day, it was to
 9 disperse into the area to the north.
 10 **Q.** All right. Just to come back to the question, the plan
 11 was you were going to go down there and effectuate a mass
 12 arrest, correct?
 13 **A.** That's my recollection.
 14 **Q.** And as part of that plan you had to disperse the crowd,
 15 to drive them towards the Kmart parking lot because that's
 16 where you were going to effectuate the mass arrest, correct?
 17 **A.** Yes, sir.
 18 **Q.** Okay. And that was all decided before you even arrived,
 19 correct?
 20 **A.** We had those conversations, yes.
 21 **Q.** All right. As a matter of fact, you had conversations
 22 that the plan was to use shock and awe to subdue the
 23 protesters, correct?
 24 **A.** So that was a term or a military term that was assigned
 25 to it afterwards, and I don't even recall where that

1 **A.** A different posture than previous nights.
2 **Q.** You were -- you briefed your troopers that they were to
3 use all necessary force to end the protests, correct?
4 **A.** I do not recall "all necessary." We would use tools
5 that we had to quell the riotous behavior.
6 **Q.** So if that was a trooper's understanding when they
7 arrived at that scene under your command, they misunderstood
8 the instructions you gave them?
9 **A.** Yes, sir.
10 **Q.** Okay. Now, you did not inform the troopers that the
11 media was exempt from the curfew that night, correct?
12 **A.** There were conversations about media. Actually, so we
13 did have conversations that there was a media exemption.
14 **Q.** Let me clarify my question because it was a little
15 unclear. You provided a briefing before you deployed out
16 that night, correct?
17 **A.** Yes.
18 **Q.** You gathered together in a room with your troopers, yes?
19 **A.** Given the large amount, it was outside, yes.
20 **Q.** Okay. But you spoke to the group of troopers to tell
21 them what the mission was, right?
22 **A.** Yes, sir.
23 **Q.** Okay. And as part of that conversation, you didn't
24 discuss with them that media were exempt from the curfew,
25 correct?

1 from the curfews, that was because the other commanders you
2 are talking about didn't inform them, correct?
3 **A.** I would not agree with that, sir.
4 **Q.** Okay. Well, whose fault was it that the lieutenants
5 didn't know the media was exempt from the curfew?
6 MS. LANDRUM: Objection, assumes facts, Your
7 Honor.
8 THE COURT: Sustained. You may lay a foundation
9 and then ask that question, if you can.

10 MR. RIACH: At this point in time I'm going to

10 MR. KRAICH: At this point in time I'm going to
11 pull up -- ask Ms. Anderson to pull up an attorneys' eyes
12 only marked document, Your Honor, so to the extent we need
13 to clear -- I think there may only be one individual.
14 Sorry, Mr. Tuite.

15 (Mr. Tuite excused from courtroom)

16

282

1 **A.** Personally, I did not.

2 **Q.** Okay. And you hadn't given that cautionary instruction

3 to them any of the nights, did you?

4 **A.** So my memory of that is we had conversations at the

5 command level, at the captains level. So I am one of the

6 commanders. That information was communicated from the

7 captains to the lieutenants, that there was -- they were

8 exempted from the curfew, but they were not exempted from a

9 dispersal order.

10 **Q.** And you had talked with your lieutenants about that?

11 **A.** So I had a conversation with my peer group of commanders

12 and then that message was relayed to the lieutenants, who in

13 turn would relay it to the troopers.

14 **Q.** When you say "was relayed," were you the person who

15 relayed that message?

16 **A.** To my peer group, yes.

17 **Q.** To the lieutenants?

18 **A.** Not personally, no.

19 **Q.** Whose job was it to relay that information to the

20 lieutenants?

21 **A.** The other co-commanders.

22 **Q.** Okay. So if the message wasn't conveyed, it was because

23 they didn't convey it, correct?

24 **A.** I'm -- I don't understand, sir.

25 **Q.** If the lieutenants didn't learn that press was exempt

A horizontal bar chart illustrating the percentage of respondents who have heard of various environmental terms. The y-axis lists the terms, and the x-axis represents the percentage of respondents, ranging from 0% to 100% in increments of 10%. The bars are black.

Term	Percentage (%)
Climate change	98
Green energy	95
Sustainable development	92
Renewable energy	90
Carbon footprint	88
Eco-friendly	85
Global warming	82
Green economy	78
Carbon tax	75
Renewable resources	72
Green building	68
Green technology	65
Green products	62
Green infrastructure	58
Green jobs	55
Green transportation	52
Green energy sources	48
Green buildings	45
Green infrastructure projects	42
Green energy initiatives	38
Green energy policies	35
Green energy companies	32
Green energy investments	28
Green energy technologies	25
Green energy solutions	22
Green energy alternatives	18
Green energy sources of energy	15
Green energy generation	12
Green energy production	10
Green energy generation methods	8
Green energy generation processes	5
Green energy generation systems	3
Green energy generation facilities	2
Green energy generation equipment	1
Green energy generation equipment	0.5

12 BY MR. RIACH:

13 Q. Major Dwyer, you testified during your direct
14 examination that at Daunte Wright protests you had seen some
15 clearly identifiable journalists, you went to them and told
16 them to move to a safer place. Do you recall discussing
17 that in your direct testimony?

18 A. Yes, sir, I do.

19 Q. What was it about those journalists that made them
20 clearly identifiable?

21 **A.** Either previous contact with them, recognition from one
22 of the metro stations. Otherwise a verifiable press
23 credential that I saw affiliated with a station or
24 reporting.

25 Q. So you could see on these individuals a press

289

1 credential, and that indicated to you they might be a member
 2 of the press. Then you went and spoke with them and you
 3 confirmed they were a member of the press. Is that how it
 4 went with some of these folks?

5 **A.** Yes, sir.

6 **Q.** Okay. And when you say "a verifiable credential," what
 7 did you do to verify the credentials of these individuals
 8 you spoke with?

9 **A.** Given the environment, you know, if it proceeded to a
 10 mass arrest situation, that's probably where the verifiable
 11 came in, but having some knowledge of what Fox or KARE 11 or
 12 those stations' logos, they seemed legitimate as I looked at
 13 those and talked to them.

14 **Q.** All right. Now, you are familiar with the arrest of
 15 Carolyn Sung, correct?

16 **A.** I am.

17 **Q.** You discussed that in your declaration you filed in this
 18 case, right?

19 **A.** Yes.

20 **Q.** Okay.

21 MR. RIACH: And let's pull up Exhibit 37.

22 BY MR. RIACH:

23 **Q.** Do you recognize this document, Major Dwyer?

24 **A.** Yes, I do.

25 **Q.** All right.

290

1 MR. RIACH: And, Ms. Anderson, can you move ahead
 2 to page 8. Thank you.

3 BY MR. RIACH:

4 **Q.** That's your signature, correct, sir?

5 **A.** Yes, sir, it is.

6 **Q.** All right.

7 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, we would move admission of
 8 Plaintiffs' 37.

9 MS. LANDRUM: No objection, Your Honor. It's
 10 already filed in this case.

11 THE COURT: Exhibit 37 is received.

12 MR. RIACH: Thank you, Judge.

13 MR. RIACH: So can you turn back to page 5,
 14 please, of this exhibit, Ms. Anderson. Thank you.

15 BY MR. RIACH:

16 **Q.** Paragraph 14 of this declaration relates to Ms. Sung,
 17 correct?

18 **A.** It does.

19 **Q.** All right. And it states you're aware of plaintiffs'
 20 claim that CNN reporter Carolyn Sung was arrested by MSP
 21 troopers on April 13th after she repeatedly offered her
 22 press credentials, correct?

23 **A.** Yes, sir.

24 **Q.** Okay. And it states, "Ms. Sung did not have her press
 25 credentials on her person, nor was she clearly identifiable

291

1 as press." That -- is that information that you got from
 2 your troopers?

3 **A.** Yes, it is.

4 **Q.** And which troopers did you talk about this arrest with?
 5 **A.** So I had a conversation actually again with one of my
 6 peers, and that was a fellow captain and he informed me of
 7 the situation. As far as the specific troopers involved, I
 8 believe it was one of the troopers from the Detroit Lakes
 9 district, but that's trying to recall.

10 **Q.** Okay. So you talked to the captain who supervised these
 11 troopers, but not the troopers themselves; is that correct?

12 **A.** So we were made aware of the arrest of Ms. Sung after
 13 the fact. So from our standpoint, myself and my captain
 14 partner, we were trying to decipher or find out the timeline
 15 of where Ms. Sung was at. And as soon as, like, her
 16 credentials were matched up with her -- she had already
 17 progressed through the processing line without credentials
 18 and without identification, but as soon as that was made
 19 known to us, she was taken off site to a location to reunite
 20 with her reporting team.

21 **Q.** All right. So you were present on the night of
 22 April 13th when Ms. Sung was arrested?

23 **A.** I was in Brooklyn Center, yes.

24 **Q.** Okay. And I just want to make sure I'm understanding
 25 your testimony correctly. So some of this information

292

1 that's in paragraph 14 comes from your experiences on
 2 April 13th dealing with the arrest of Ms. Sung; is that
 3 accurate?

4 **A.** Dealing with the individual's information relayed to me
 5 who had --

6 **Q.** Okay. So you got information that a CNN journalist had
 7 been arrested, her name was Carolyn Sung. Who gave you that
 8 information?

9 **A.** One of my fellow captains.

10 **Q.** All right. And you get this information from your
 11 captain. What did you do next?

12 **A.** So then he was assigned to find out the location of this
 13 individual or if Ms. Sung had proceeded through the
 14 processing line; and once we were able to determine if that
 15 occurred, then we were able to match her up with her
 16 reporting team.

17 **Q.** So you set about trying to find out if she was still on
 18 site at the protests, that was your first step; is that
 19 correct?

20 **A.** That was assigned to a captain, yes.

21 **Q.** Okay. And it was determined that she was still on site,
 22 correct?

23 **A.** That is my belief.

24 **Q.** Okay. And it's your understanding that then she was
 25 reunited with her reporting team?

	293		295
1	A. Correct.	1	Ms. Anderson.
2	Q. And you're confident that you have the whole story	2	Your Honor, I want to make sure I'm not trying the
3	there?	3	Court's patience here. I have maybe 15 more minutes, 20
4	A. That's my understanding, yes.	4	more minutes. Is that going to sit me in bad stead?
5	Q. You write she was apparently separated from her	5	THE COURT: And that would be the conclusion of
6	backpack. How did she get separated from her backpack; do	6	any evidence from any party; is that correct?
7	you know?	7	MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, typically I would like
8	A. I do not.	8	to do a redirect examination to address several of these
9	Q. Okay. You're not aware of troopers grabbing her by the	9	topics.
10	backpack and throwing her to the ground?	10	THE COURT: So you may have until 5:35, and then
11	A. No.	11	we'll have redirect and then we will conclude this hearing.
12	Q. The captain didn't convey that information to you?	12	MR. RIACH: Understood, Your Honor. Thank you
13	A. That's not information I have.	13	very much for your patience and forbearance. It's much
14	Q. Are you aware that a trooper yelled at her, "Do you	14	appreciated.
15	speak English?"	15	BY MR. RIACH:
16	A. I am not aware of that.	16	Q. When did you first become aware of the temporary
17	Q. You didn't hear anything about that?	17	restricting order in this case, Major?
18	A. I did not.	18	A. It was the day following April 16th -- or the mass
19	Q. Okay. Do you know Ms. Sung is Asian?	19	arrest at Brooklyn Center. So April 15th?
20	A. I do not.	20	MR. RIACH: Ms. Anderson, can you pull up -- I
21	Q. Okay. And you state, "Ms. Sung was released immediately	21	want to make sure that we don't pull up an AEO document
22	after her media status was confirmed," correct?	22	inadvertently. I think we're okay. Ms. Anderson, can you
23	A. It is my belief that she was transported to one of our	23	pull up Plaintiffs' Exhibit 27, please.
24	district offices off site to be reunited.	24	BY MR. RIACH:
25	Q. So she wasn't transported to the Hennepin County Jail,	25	Q. This is -- Exhibit 27 is an e-mail from Matt Sokol. The
	294		296
1	that's your understanding?	1	top e-mail is from Matt Sokol to DPS patrol captains and
2	A. That is my understanding, yes.	2	above from April 17th. Is this the e-mail that -- where you
3	Q. She wasn't patted down and searched at the Hennepin	3	learned of the TRO?
4	County Jail?	4	A. I believe it says a TRO attachment, so yes.
5	A. I do not have that information.	5	Q. You are on this distribution list, I guess is my
6	Q. There was no correction officer who put her hands into	6	question?
7	Ms. Sung's pants and bra, you never heard about that?	7	A. Yes, sir, I am.
8	A. I never heard that, sir.	8	Q. All right. And you don't recall hearing about the TRO
9	Q. You never heard that she was told to strip and put on an	9	before this e-mail was sent out, correct?
10	orange uniform?	10	A. Not in the field, no.
11	A. I did not hear that, sir.	11	Q. When you're out in the field, how often do you
12	Q. Okay. Did you hear that she was placed in a jail cell?	12	communicate with your supervisors?
13	A. I did not.	13	A. So it's at that point situational dependent. When we
14	Q. Okay. Did you talk to Commissioner Schnell about this	14	are engaged in an operation, if you will, we will deploy and
15	incident at all?	15	implement our operation. If there's something where we need
16	A. I did not.	16	assistance or contact with our supervisor, we will initiate
17	Q. He never reached out to you and said, "I'm investigating	17	that.
18	an incident involving Carolyn Sung"?	18	Q. And how do you communicate with your supervisors when
19	A. I do not have that knowledge.	19	you're out in the field?
20	Q. Okay. Did you talk to him about this declaration?	20	A. Typically by cell phone.
21	A. To Mr. Schnell?	21	Q. Okay. You have your cell phone on you when you're out
22	Q. Correct.	22	there?
23	A. I did not.	23	A. Yes, sir.
24	Q. Okay.	24	Q. Do you recall talking to your supervisors at all on the
25	MR. RIACH: You can take that down. Thanks,	25	evening of April 16th?

305

307

1 **A.** I am not.
 2 **Q.** And you just testified that when you were circulating
 3 among the protesters and the mass arrests, you saw people
 4 wearing press patches; is that correct?

5 **A.** That is correct.

6 **Q.** Did you document that anywhere?

7 **A.** I don't recall.

8 MR. RIACH: That's all I have, Your Honor.

9 EXAMINATION

10 BY THE COURT:

11 **Q.** I have a question. Was it the press patches that some
 12 were wearing and the fact that individuals had cameras, or
 13 was it that individuals were using their phones to videotape
 14 or the camera aspect of their phone to record what was going
 15 on?

16 **A.** Thank you, Your Honor. So I think that speaks to the
 17 mere, like, confusing element of it.

18 There are individuals that are trying to portray
 19 themselves as press, so they would indeed, you know, have
 20 additions to their clothing. I think in one of the videos
 21 we saw a vest that said, "Press" on it, but there's no,
 22 like, verifiable credentials.

23 There were many individuals documenting the
 24 events, and then having contact with them at a later point
 25 they would say that they are affiliated with a blog or an

1 that they're press.

2 So if there's interaction with law enforcement and
 3 an individual and if they merely have a phone and they say,
 4 "I'm with the press," you know, anybody at that location,
 5 the entire crowd could say, "I'm a member of the press"
 6 based on simply having a phone.

7 So if we are unable to identify and verify, that
 8 speaks to the compounding issue or what complicates the
 9 matter when we're trying to restore order in these areas.
 10 It's a hurdle at the scene, and it severely complicates or
 11 hinders the ability of law enforcement.

12 **Q.** Well, it seems to also hinder the ability of the free
 13 press to do its work with the tools that it has, if they are
 14 presumed not to be members of the press because they're
 15 using an iPhone to record as opposed to something else,
 16 doesn't it?

17 **A.** Yeah. And it's not, like, so much the recording tool,
 18 but it's the working relationship. So to be able to have a
 19 conversation with the individuals and ask them to go to a
 20 safe location. Considering the law enforcement operation
 21 and that an area that is deemed unsafe not only for the
 22 individuals inside, law enforcement and in this case the
 23 Brooklyn Center area, the heavily residential area, we need
 24 compliance. We need to work collaboratively and
 25 cooperatively. And given the instances that we've talked

306

308

1 independent business or what have you. So in those
 2 instances we would try to take steps to verify either
 3 through their employer, but even we would implement means,
 4 like, through the Secretary of State to see if they had an
 5 affiliation. And if there was anything leaning towards, we
 6 would, you know, give the benefit of the doubt. So it was
 7 the actual claim that, yes, individuals were affiliated with
 8 the press.

9 **Q.** And that was based on their verbal representation?

10 **A.** At times, yes. We would have very -- it was very close
 11 quarters and many times they were standing right in front of
 12 the line and asking, you know, for compliance and it would
 13 be a matter of "I'm the press," which was also compounded
 14 by, like, my previous interactions with members of the
 15 media, there were times where there was very unprofessional
 16 dialogue being purported to myself or troopers by people
 17 that were portraying them as press. So it was engaged in
 18 conversation, yes.

19 **Q.** Given the prevalence of phones that record and the use
 20 of phones to record activity by individuals in the community
 21 and members of the press, were you discerning any means of
 22 differentiation?

23 **A.** So that's what lends itself to this difficult scenario
 24 that we're trying to navigate through. So there's not an
 25 assignment that they're press, but they can certainly claim

1 about in Minneapolis and Brooklyn Center, it's those
 2 instances that are problematic.

3 **Q.** So if a member of the press is using an iPhone as
 4 opposed to a huge, you know, camera that would look like
 5 something that an ordinary tourist would not have, you would
 6 not be able to discern, but you would not necessarily take
 7 their word for the fact that they were a member of the press
 8 when they told you they were?

9 **A.** So, Your Honor, like, a piece of equipment has no
 10 bearing on or, like, in my assessment of things on their
 11 affiliation with the media. It could be a flip phone. It
 12 could be an iPhone. It could be a commercial-grade camera.
 13 It's being able to work through the dialogue and the
 14 parameters, a conversation that they do have a press
 15 affiliation.

16 So it's this double-edged sword of members of the
 17 media in the crowd and the same riotous dynamic, even though
 18 they may not be engaged in it, but then on the other side
 19 it's individuals that are trying to emulate or mock members
 20 of the media, which is the biggest concern, who try to cause
 21 harm not specifically on law enforcement, but anybody in
 22 that area, which we saw in Minneapolis. It wasn't -- nobody
 23 was exempt from it. It was the business owners. It was
 24 residences that were subject to the arson and the looting
 25 and criminal activity night after night after night.

309

1 So the media element isn't necessarily the largest
 2 issue. It's those that are trying to portray themselves as
 3 media. And given the chaotic environment and when we're
 4 asked to make basically split-second decisions on how to
 5 implement a plan to restore order in that environment, it's
 6 very, very difficult, not to mention the environmental
 7 conditions and other situational experiences that are
 8 occurring.

9 THE COURT: I'm going to ask counsel in light
 10 of -- I invited these -- I asked these questions, invited
 11 this testimony from this witness. You have not had an
 12 opportunity to question the witness about anything that the
 13 witness has just said as a result of my questions. Are
 14 there any additional questions that either counsel would
 15 like to make or ask in light of this additional information?

16 MS. LANDRUM: No, Your Honor.

17 MR. RIACH: No, Your Honor.

18 THE COURT: Okay. Then the matter is taken under
 19 advisement. Is there anything else that we need to address
 20 at this time?

21 MS. LANDRUM: Your Honor, I have one minor
 22 housekeeping. My co-counsel, Mr. Weiner, alerted me to the
 23 fact that we laid foundation for Exhibit 10, which was the
 24 use of force policy, but then I never asked Your Honor to
 25 actually enter Exhibit 10, the use of force policy, into

310

1 evidence. May I do that now?

2 THE COURT: You may. And I thank your co-counsel
 3 because I didn't realize that either.

4 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you. So the state defendants
 5 move to admit Exhibit 10.

6 MR. RIACH: No objection.

7 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you, Your Honor.

8 THE COURT: Exhibit 10 is received.

9 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you so much, Your Honor, for
 10 the extra time today as well.

11 MR. RIACH: Your Honor, I also received one of
 12 those notes, that I forgot to offer Exhibit 27, which is the
 13 e-mail thread to the DPS captains and above about the TRO.
 14 We would ask to admit Exhibit 27.

15 THE COURT: Any objection?

16 MS. LANDRUM: I believe there's hearsay within
 17 that exhibit, but now I don't have it pulled up and I don't
 18 remember what it is. We won't object, Your Honor. You can
 19 consider it.

20 THE COURT: Exhibit 27 is received.

21 I want to thank co-counsel for both parties for
 22 your diligence and making sure that we have a clear and
 23 accurate record and a fulsome one. So thank you.

24 I also want to thank the attorneys for your
 25 presentations today and your questioning of the witnesses

311

1 and for handling this in such a professional and fulsome
 2 manner. So thank you for the excellence in your work today.
 3 And so we will conclude now. The matter is taken
 4 under advisement and this will conclude our hearing.

5 MS. LANDRUM: Thank you.

6 (Court adjourned at 5:49 p.m.)

7 * * *

13 Certified by: s/ Lori A. Simpson

14 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

310

Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

15 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

16 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

17 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

18 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

19 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

20 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

21 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

22 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

23 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

24 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR

25 Lori A. Simpson, RMR-CRR